# His Gang

Author not credited

STORYPDF

Complete English text · A4 reading edition

# Contents


Chapter 1 5

Chapter 2 11

Chapter 3 20

Chapter 4 26

Chapter 5 32

Chapter 6 40

Chapter 7 45

Chapter 8 54

Chapter 9 62

Chapter 10 68

Chapter 11 80

Chapter 12 87

Chapter 13 95

Chapter 14 109

Chapter 15 117

Chapter 16 126

Chapter 17 135

Chapter 18 141

Chapter 19 150

Chapter 20 161

Chapter 21 170

Chapter 22 177

Chapter 23 185

Chapter 24 193

Chapter 25 203

Chapter 26 212

Chapter 27 220

Chapter 28 228

Chapter 29 235

Chapter 30 243

Epilogue 251

# About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: StoryPDF / His Gang.

Reading edition: 2026-10-28. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

# Chapter 1

"Rain"? Faith asked as she walked in and I looked up at her, and stood up straight "Oh Hey, Faith".

She shifted uncomfortably and fidgeted with her fingers as she bit her lip "You're really going home..."?

I sighed and ran a hand through my hair "Yeah, I'm going home".

"But why" She started "Your dad just treats you horribly, and its just going to get worse. Why go back to the place that causes it all? Just stay here".

I offered her a small slight smile "Faith, I'll be fine. And I can't stay here, I don't live here".

"But you're with Ryker" She defended and I chuckled "He's my boyfriend, not my husband. I'm not just going to move into his apartment".

She frowned and I pulled my jacket on and stuck my phone in my back pocket. Ryker came out looking exhausted as ever.

He didn't sleep at all last night, and I felt bad. He was on the phone with the guys all night trying to figure out how to deal with my dad, and he was worried about me all night.

He had bags under his eyes and his hair was messy and he had a pair of sweatpants and a t-shirt on, and his face drooped and looked sleep deprived.

Faith hugged me quickly "Text me when you get home" she said and I nodded, and she walked out; leaving Ryker and I.

He walked up to me and took my hands in his and pressed his forehead to mine.

"I told you to go to sleep last night, and you obviously didn't listen" I said and he rolled his eyes "I'm fine, princess".

"Ryk, you look exhausted. Are you sure you don't want me to take care of Zoe today, so you can go get some sleep"?

Leah had to go to some parent-teacher meeting/conference with Reece today, so Leah couldn't take Zoe today.

"Babe, I'm fine" He sighed and tucked a piece of hair behind my ear and his eyes bored onto mine, and I blinked a few times and looked down as I knew where this was leading too.

"Rain, please don't-" Ryker started but I shook my head against his and looked up again to meet his eyes "I have to go home. I can't just stay here forever".

"Rain your home is where you get hurt"! He exclaimed in frustration and pulled back from me "I don't understand why you keep fucking going back to the place where all this shit happens"!?

I pressed my lips in a thin line, and closed my eyes slowly for a second before re-opening them, "I need to go. I'll have my brothers".

"Rain, please" He begged and I stood up straight and pecked his lips, and squeezed his hand in reassurance then walking out.

* * * * * * * *

I walked into my dad's den, and I leaned in the doorway.

My heart started to pound faster, and he was reading a newspaper at his desk. I knocked gently on the door with my knuckles and he looked up.

He took his reading glasses off and set the newspaper down slowly, and stared at me with his eyes boring into me.

"Rain" He clenched his jaw "I see you've come to your senses, and are coming to apologize for the way you have been acting out of line, lately".

I swallowed hard and looked down and mumbled "I'm not the one who should be apologizing".

"What"? He snapped with anger rising in his voice, and I stood up straight in perfect posture as I tried to not snap.

"Um..." I trailed off and he exclaimed "Is that all you have to say?! 'Um'?! Because 'Um' doesn't fix my car that you just destroyed! Or the way you completely disrespected me!"

"I didn't disrespect you" I spoke up and he pushed his chair out and stood up, then walking around his desk and coming close to me.

"You didn't disrespect me? Street racing is disrespectful to me! You're my daughter, and I have a reputation around here"! He gritted through his teeth.

"You're the one who hit me"! I snapped and his eyes went dark and he gave me a warning look as he went tense and I could see his veins against his skin.

"You deserved to be hit! And I don't know what shit you're pulling, Rain, but it needs to stop! For one, stop hanging out with that gang and especially Anderson!"

"He's my boyfriend" I mumbled under my breath, but loud enough for him to hear what I had just said.

He clutched his fist and sent a punch flying into the wall and the wall collapsed to where his fist just had landed and a whole had formed.

"NO!" He gritted "You break up with him, right now! I'm not having my daughter be seen with that worthless piece of shit"!

"Whoa, whoa" Ryan said as he came in and interrupted and he then realized, and grabbed my hand and pulled me out of the room.

Ryan dragged me out of the house and shut the door, and he exclaimed "What the hell is he pissed off about now"!?

I bit my lip and looked away and scratched the back of my neck uncomfortably "He found out about Ryker and I....dating.....".

Ryan's eyes grew wide and he yelled "WHAT"!?

"It's not that big of a deal, Ryan..." I started and he cut me off "You know what, I don't approve of this, but right now is not the time to argue. Just let's go".

"Go to where"? I asked and he didn't answer my question and he just walked to his car, and opened the driver's door and nodding his head towards the passenger seat "Get in".

I sighed and got in without pushing the subject any further.

* * * * * * * *

I shifted in my seat and let out a sigh, as I looked ahead out the long road that was bordered with trees, and we were out of the city part of New York.

"Ryan, where the heck are we going"? I asked and turned to look at him, and he put on his tun signal as he got off a highway exit "The Broccoli Factory".

I rolled my eyes, at his comment and put my head back against my seat. When I was little my brothers would always tell me we were going to "The Broccoli Factory", just to get me upset.

I began to recognize the road, and my eyes widened and he came up to a house and parked.

"Are you serious"!? I exclaimed then quickly unbuckling and getting out and slamming the door, then soon everyone came over.

"Little Thompson"! Becker yelled and I ran up the steps and hugged him tightly. He chuckled "Hey Rain".

Becker, Beverly, and Landon Knight, are my cousins from my mom sides and I haven't seen them in years.

I pulled away and Beverly pulled me into a tight hug. She had tears prick her eyes "Oh my God, I missed you so much".

Beverly was 22. She had long wavy brown hair and green eyes with a light complexion. She was always fairly close to me, along with her brothers.

"You've grown so much" She said as I pulled back and she scanned over me "Oh my gosh...you're 18 now, I feel so old". I chuckled a bit and Ryan came up and slung an arm over my shoulders "You good staying here for a couple of days"?

I nodded and offered him a small smile which was fake "Yeah, I'll be fine".

* * * * * * * * * *

I tapped my fingers on top of the soda can I had in my hands. I was sitting at the kitchen table, and in a very uncomfortable wooden chair.

Beverly, Becker, and Landon weren't "rich" and were more on the "poor" side, and they lived on the outskirts of New York in Town-houses, in a bad neighborhood where there was always something going on.

Ryan went home and grabbed a bunch of my clothes and other things I needed, and he said I was going to be here for as long as needed, till they get my dad help that he needs.

I stared straight ahead and down at the table as I got lost in my own thoughts, and my eyes just zoned in on the wooden mark on the table, and I couldn't snap out of it.

"Hey Rain" Beverly's voice said as she walked in and sat down at the other end of the table, where I was staring at.

I snapped out of my trance and smiled slightly. "So..."She trailed off as she traced circles on the table with her index finger "Ryan told me you have a boyfriend".

I nodded slightly and mumbled a "Yeah" then cracking open the soda can. My thoughts went to how Ryker was going to kill me for not texting him, and letting know what happened.

"What's his name"? She asked smiling widely.

"Ryker Anderson" I answered, and she nodded and asked "Have a picture of him". I nodded in response and went into my camera roll and scrolling through, as she took a sip of her water.

I reached across the table and showed her the picture on my phone. Her eyes lit up, and she spit the water she was drinking back into the glass "Oh my God! He's so hot-....Oh, sorry Rain, I didn't mean-".

I sat back down and shook my head "No, it's fine. I hear girls say it all the time".

"How old is he"? She asked curiously.

"20" I shrugged, and a small smirk appeared on her lips "That's a nice age gap...for future references I mean He's probably so experienced".

"Beverly!" I exclaimed and she laughed "What? I'm sorry Rain....you know, I have to tease you about your boyfriend...it's what cousins do".

I rolled my eyes and my phone started to vibrate. "Speaking of boyfriends" I mumbled as Ryker's number appeared on my screen.

"Excuse me for one sec" I said as I got up and walked outside, and opened the worn-out broken-down screen door and walked out to the wooden porch.

I answered "Hey".

"Where the hell are you?!" He yelled, and I flinched at the sound of his yelling and tucked a piece of hair behind my ear.

"Ryker....please calm down" I said softly.

"Don't tell me to calm down! You just left without telling anyone! You're not at the warehouse! I called Joel, and he said you weren't home! I called Stella and she said you weren't at work! I called Mrs. Doyle to see if you were at some school shit!-"

"Ryker" I cut him off "I'm at my cousin's house. Ryan took me here, and I'm staying here for a few days while they settle things out with my dad".

He sighed in aggravation, with some relief "Do you know how worried you had me?! I didn't know if anything happened or where you were-".

"I know, and I'm sorry" I apologized, and ran a hand through my hair.

"Don't ever do that to me again, Rain. You had me worried sick" He said, as he started to calm down and his voice wasn't as tense.

I leaned back up against the outside wall of the house, and held my phone up to my ear "You know you don't need to worry. I'm 18, I can handle myself, Ryk".

"Princess" He laughed without any humor "I know...but have you met yourself"?

"What's that suppose to mean"? I questioned and he sighed "Nothing. Now where's your cousins"?

I bit my lip and shifted in my space "I can't tell you".

Ryan called and told me that when he got home that my dad was flipping over Ryker and I, and then demanded that I didn't tell Ryker where I was, because my dad would track him down then it'd lead to me.

"What do you mean you can't tell me?" He asked with frustration.

"I just can't..." I trailed off.

"Rain, don't be ridiculous...Where are you"?

"The Broccoli Factory" I teased.

"Rain" He warned.

"I can't tell you" I stated "I just can't..."

"So you're just planning on ignoring me for a week or so..."? He asked with annoyance filling his voice.

"I'm not ignoring you now....We're talking, I'm just not seeing you" I said in a matter-of-fact tone.

"Rain, do you hear yourself right now?! Because you sound ridiculous! I'm your fucking boyfriend, for crying out loud"! He yelled.

"Goodnight Ryker" I said then hanging up, and sticking my phone in my back pocket. I sighed and walked back inside.

# Chapter 2

"Whoa, whoa, what the hell are you wearing"!? Becker exclaimed and I rolled my eyes "A uniform for my stupid private school".

"Hey, enjoy it now" Landon said narrowing his eyes and pointing a spoon at me "Because Work, sucks".

I clapped and joked sarcastically "From the words of Mr. Wisdom, everyone. Landon Knight".

He pretended to bow "Thank you, thank you very much". We all laughed, and I grabbed my backpack and slung it over my backpack.

Beverly ate the rest of her food quickly then standing up and saying "Come on, before you're late" then grabbing her keys.

I followed her out and Beck yelled after me "Don't have sex, you'll die!"

* * * * * * * * *

"Cause it's too cold, for you here. So let me hold your hands, in the whole of my sweater" Beverly and I sang as she drove. I snapped my fingers to the beat of the much.

We came into the school parking lot, and she parked. I opened the door and got out then grabbing my backpack and slinging it over my shoulder.

"I'll text when to pick me up, I have detention" I said and she chuckled then nodded "Okay. I'm going to stop by your house and talk to your brothers about everything".

I nodded and shut the door and waved "Bye Bev" and jogged away. I put my earbuds in and plugged it into my phone and put on music, so that no one would try to talk to me.

I pushed open the door and walked through the hallways of hell. I walked through the hallway, and got stares from some people, but just shrugged it off.

I went to my locker and punched in my locker combination, then shoving my books in and grabbing the books I needed.

"Excuse me" A girl's voice said and I looked up from my locker and at the girl and she had red dyed hair with brown eyes, and she offered a small smile. I took out my headphones, so I wouldn't be rude.

"Uh, I'm Shaliene Jergens, I'm new" She said and bit her lip.

I blinked a few times slowly "Oh, Hi. I'm-".

"Oh, I know who you are. Rain Thompson...the Sheriffs daughter..." She said giving me a look, and chuckling a bit.

"Right..." I trailed off then mumbling "The Sheriff's daughter...".

"Uh, I was wondering; could you tell me how to get to my first class"? She asked and I put my hand out for her schedule and she handed it to me.

I scanned over it "You have Biology first; which is upstairs....We have lunch and the last two periods together though. Let me just get my books, and I'll walk you to Biology".

I handed her back her schedule, and turned back to my locker then quickly grabbing my textbook and shutting my locker door.

I led the way down the hall and she walked beside me.

"So....how long have you been going here for"? She asked curiously.

"Oh, I've been here for 4 years, since I was a freshmen" I answered and tucked a loose strand hair behind my ear.

She nodded slightly and I saw Blake in the hall talking to his group of friends. His eyes met mine, and he said something to the guys he was talking to, then jogging up to me.

"Hey, Thompson" He smirked and slung an arm over my shoulders. I pushed his arm off my shoulders, and Shaliene gave a confused look "Are you two dating"?

"No!" I said "I have a boyfriend". Blake rolled his eyes at that "Speaking of...I don't know what side of the bed you put him on, but he's been a real asshole lately".

"Like you're not" I said narrowing my eyes at him.

Blake clenched his jaw "Who's your friend"? Then winking at Shaliene, making her blush in response.

"Why are you still here"!? I asked in annoyance and he stopped me from walking and leaned closer to my face "Because, I'm giving you the presence you want".

I scoffed and went back to walking as Shaliene followed behind me, then Blake did too.

"God, you're moody too" He muttered under his breath, and I rolled my eyes and snapped "Maybe if you would put a bag over your ugly face and left me alone, I wouldn't be "Moody"."

"Uh....Is there something that happened between you two, because the hatred tension is strong" Shaliene said.

I glared at Blake, and he held my glare. "Come on, you're going to be late for class" I said and grabbed Shaliene's forearm and pulled her down the hallway.

I came to the cafeteria, and went to a random empty table and sat down. I put in my earbuds, and opened my notebook as I studied for the test I had later.

I traced circles on the apple, I had.

Jax called me earlier, and said that my dad was drunk off his ass, and refused to get any help that he needs to quit with this drinking, and that he said all these things like he was going to track down Ryker and throw him in jail, for getting me caught up in everything.

Needless to say, I wasn't a bucket full of happiness right now...

I had a million text messages from the gang, and missed phone calls that I haven't answered. I can't see them either, because of the threats that my dad made...and they'd get in huge trouble.

"Hey" Shaliene's voice said as she came over and sat down across from me. I looked up at her and offered a small smile "Hi".

"I've realized, you're not much of a talker..." She chuckled a bit.

I shook my head "No, I'm just dealing with a lot right now".

She nodded slowly "Want to talk about it"? I shook my head and offered a small fake smile "No, thanks. I'm good."

"So you have a boyfriend"? She asked curiously and I nodded. "What's his name"? She asked curiously.

"Uh...he doesn't go to school here, you wouldn't know him" I said and she shrugged "Still".

"Ryker Anderson" I sighed, and she gave an amused look "Rain Anderson...has a nice ring to it" then a smirk tugging at her lips.

I scoffed a laugh then reaching across the table and grabbing on of her french fries and throwing it at her. The fry hit her cheek and she laughed "Nice Aim".

"So, where are you from"? I asked curiously.

"Colorado" She answered and I gave her a shocked look. "Yeah, my dad got a job offering here, so my family had to move out here".

"Ahah. I've lived here for my whole life" I chuckled "It get's boring after awhile".

She narrowed her eyes at me "How do you get bored in New York City"!?

I shrugged "You just do. I mean you see one skyscraper, you've seen them all".

"Good point" She noted with a chuckle.

* * * * * * * * * *

"Rain" Mrs. Doyle called my name and I snapped out of my thoughts and looked up, and she tapped the board "What is the answer to number 5"?

I looked at the problem and bit my lip as I had no idea what the answer was. All eyes were on me in the room, and I felt uncomfortable.

I stayed silent, and waited for her to call on someone else.

"Not paying attention again..." She sighed and wrote something down on her desk "Talk to me in detention".

Everyone erupted in "Ooooo"! I put my arms out on the desk and put my head down and flushed in embarrassment.

My phone vibrated again, for the millionth time. I looked at it and saw it was a group text with everyone.

I quickly scanned through the text messages.

Reece: Dude, what if she's fucking some guy!

Ryker: Shut the hell up Reece.

Vince: I mean she could be...

Leah: Guys! She's not sleeping with some random dude!

Craig: Well she's dead, no matter what she's doing when she comes back.

Neil: Yeah, she's definitely banging some guy

Liz: Neil! Shut up! She's not! When I get home I'm going to smack you until some sense gets into your head!

Peter: I volunteer as tribute to help hit Neil!

Will: Guys! Isn't she in Mrs. Doyle class right now...just call Mrs. Doyle!

Craig: You seriously think Rain went to class..? She's ditched the same amount of Ryker has! She's barely ever there!

Ryker: How does everything get turned around on me!?

Liz: Because you're her boyfriend...duh....

Vince: No she's not in class, because she's banging some guy!! We went over this!!

I rolled at the text in annoyance....they really think I'm sleeping with some guy....

Me: Fuck you, guys! I'm not sleeping with some guy, morons!!

Neil: Holy shit! Rain!!

Leah: Where are you?!

Craig: Wait.....it could be one of her brothers, just tricking us into to thinking she actually responded...

Will: WE NEED PROOF!

Peter: PROOF INDEED

I sighed, and went on to my camera and stuck out my middle finger under my desk and took a picture then sending it to them.

Ryker: Yep, it's definitely Rain..

Liz: Rain! OHMYGAWD! Where have you been?!

Vince: Rain!!!!

Me: Would you all calm! I'm busy!

Craig: Where the hell did you run off to!?!?

Me: That's none of your business.

Ryker: Rain Eliza Thompson! Tell us where the hell you are!!

Me: We're not going over this again. I said I CAN'T tell you!!!

Ryker: OMFG! You're so frustrating!

Reece: Watch...this is going to turn into some sexting conversation, between them.

Liz: Reece!!!!

Me: I'm busy...now bye.

I turned off my phone before they could say anything, and I looked back up at the board and went back to doodling in my notebook.

The bell rang, and everyone got up and grabbed their things and rushed out of the classroom and to their lockers, so they could get out of this hell-whole.

I huffed and stayed seated in my uncomfortable desk chair, as I wanted detention to be over already...

Mrs. Doyle shut her classroom door to block out all the sound from the hallway and turned to me "Rain...Why do I have 22 missed calls from all the guys, Liz, and Leah"?

I shrugged and lied "I don't know..."

"Right..." She trailed off "And you don't know why Ryker called me yesterday; freaking out because you just ran off.."

I bit my lip "Mrs. Doyle...please, don't tell them you know where I am. Things are going on with my dad, and I just can't see them right now..."

She sighed and set her phone down "Alright...I won't tell them...".

"Thank you" I sighed in relief, and she walked up and pulled a chair out and sat in front of me "But Rain, what's going on"?

"I..I don't want to talk about it..." I trailed off and bit my lip.

She narrowed her eyes at me "Well, you need to get it out somehow, and you know I won't tell anyone or child services. I promised you that when I had you in my freshmen class, and I attend on keeping that promise".

Mrs. Doyle was always very supportive. I was always in trouble in freshmen year and went to the principal's office 23 times a day...I had a lot going on with my parents, and my dad at the time, but Mrs. Doyle got me into therapy and counselling and helped me through it.

I nodded slightly, and she sighed and tapped her hand on my desk "You can start your homework" then standing up and walking over to her desk.

I bit my lip, and thought about what to write next as I fiddled with my pen in my hand as I twirled it through my fingers.

I've been here for almost an hour and half, and was able to leave soon, and texted Bev to come pick me up.

"Hey mom, we-" Liz's voice said, and then stopped. I looked up to see her staring at me with relief crossing over her face.

I looked at Mrs. Doyle and she put her hands in surrender "I didn't tell them, that you were here". Then the rest of the gang came in.

Ryker's eyes caught mine and they were boring into me, and they were filled with anger, and all types of different emotions.

I looked at the clock and saw it was 3:30, and I was able to leave. I stood up and grabbed my books and stuffed them into my backpack "Right...well I'm better be going".

I slung my backpack over my shoulder and walked up to the door but they all blocked it, and Vince asked "Rain...what's going on"?

"Nothing" I mumbled, and Craig snapped "Nothing?! You don't just run off, because of nothing"!

I took a deep breath and raised my voice "Look! I just don't have time to deal with this right now! So just let it be! Because I'm doing this, so all your asses don't get thrown in jail!"

"Rain...what do you mean"? Neil asked, and I shifted my backpack on my shoulder and mumbled "Never mind, forget I said anything".

"Rain" Becker's voice said and he came up then freezing and giving a confused look at everyone "Who are all these people"?

They all glared at me, and I rolled my eyes and they moved out of the way and Ryker blocked the door; keeping me from leaving.

Becker went out to the hallway and waited for me.

"Ryker, move" I gritted, and his eyes were dark as he stared at me with what seemed to be no emotion or to much emotion to the point where you couldn't identify the feeling.

"Rain, what the hell are you doing? What's going on?!" He snapped and I closed my eyes shut for a second before re-opening them.

"Please don't start this again" I pleaded, and he looked at Becker out in the hall and clenched his jaw then looking back at me "Who the hell is he"!?

"Why does it matter..."? I questioned.

"So, you were off with some guy, and just running away from whatever you're running away from" He gritted "I swear to God, Rain, if you were sleeping with him-"

My eyes widened, and I shoved him back "Would you shut the hell up, Ryker!? Because you're really starting to piss me off"!

"Oh, so you were. Tell me, what's his name"!? He snapped.

"He's my cousin you dip-shit!" I yelled and he became tense and blinked slowly a few times as he took in what I said.

"Let me know when you get your shit together, and stop accusing me of cheating, when I'm not! Until you don't stop, just don't even bother talking to me" I snapped, and pushed past him and my shoulder brushed against his and a shiver was sent up my spine.

"Rain! Rain"! He called after me, but I ignored it and walked down the hallway and just wanted to get out of this place.

* * * * * * * * * *

"Are you sure you want to do this"? Jax asked, and I nodded as I stared at the warehouse in front of me.

"I still think this is a horrible idea..." Joel spoke, and denied the idea for the millionth time now.

"Joel! For the millionth time! I don't care, I just need to get this done"! I snapped in frustration.

He sighed and sat back in his seat. Ryan, Jax, and I all were out at the warehouse.

"Wish me luck" I sighed and opened the car door and getting out.

"Do you need us to wait"? Ryan asked, and I shook my head "No, I'll get a ride or something" then walking up to the warehouse.

I pushed the door open and a shiver went up my spine.

I walked up the unsteady steps, and went into the main room which was on the top floor. I took a deep breath and reached and clasped my hand around the door knob, then turning it and it creaked open.

I walked in, and their head's all snapped up at me "I need a favor".

* * * * * * * *

"So...you want your dad to get caught doing something, and get thrown in jail"? Craig questioned and I nodded slightly.

"That insane" Vince exclaimed "He's the sheriff! He runs this town, they won't bust him for anything"!

Neil nodded "Vince is right, plus he donates a lot of money to the county jail, if they throw him in...they'll loose all the money..."

"Yeah, being Rich and having authority, you could get away with anything you wanted..." Ryker nodded and clenched his jaw.

I let out a frustrated groan, and Liz offered me a small smile.

"Well we need to think this through...and if someone screws it up, it's going to go all downhill, and we're all going to be stuck in jail" Will stated.

My eyes met Ryker's and I bit my lip and his eyes narrowed at my lips. He stood up and walked over to me and put a hand out. I looked up at him and he was looking down at me.

I put my hand in his and he pulled me up off the couch, and pulled me into the kitchen, and shut the door; so know one would see or hear.

He immediately picked me up and sat me down on the counter and smashed his lips into mine.

His arms slid around my waist and pulled me closer to him. I wrapped my arms around his neck, and the kiss was hungry.

His tongue found mine and I closed my eyes shut, and he pulled on my bottom lip. My cheeks flushed red and I missed the feeling of being close to Ryker.

I pulled away breathlessly and opened my eyes and looked at him. He pressed his forehead to mine and placed his hands on my thighs "Don't leave like that again".

"I won't" I said and laced my fingers through his, and he pecked my lips.

"I'm sorry about earlier and accusing you of going off and sleeping with some guy" He apologized "It's just...I haven't actually had a relationship since Chloe, and every girls just been a one-night stand...But Rain, I don't want you to just be some fling..."

My heart began to race, and I swallowed hard, and looked up at Ryker, and at his bright blue eyes. My lips tugged up into a smile.

"Is the Ryker Anderson apologizing to me"? I asked pretending to be shocked.

He rolled his eyes "Don't let it get to your head".

I chuckled as I looked down at my lap, before looking back up and at Ryker "Don't worry...I won't just be some fling" I trailed off in almost a whisper.

* * * * * * * * * *

"No, it'd be 3" Ryker said and erased my work with his pencil and wrote the number 3 down. I groaned in frustration "I hate math"!

"I realized" Ryker muttered and rolled his eyes.

It was 10 o'clock and we were all still at the warehouse. I was laying in Ryker's lap, and he was helping me with my homework, that I didn't finish in detention.

He rested his chin on my shoulder and examined over the work, then erasing a problem "Rain...you can't pair those..they're not congruent".

"I'm done with math. I don't think I'll ever need to know the formula of Depth of Field!" I said annoyed and went to get up, but Ryker pulled me back down into his lap.

"Babe, you need to finish this" He said and kissed the side of my head, and I frowned.

"Looks like Ryker's going to be the parent that helps the kids with their homework" Leah laughed and Ryker flipped her off as he sent her a glare.

"We are never having kids" I muttered to myself under my breath, and went back to writing down the formula on my homework.

"Hey! Can you blame me? I want to be an aunt.." Leah said "And I want it to be Rain instead of some stuck-up bitchy slut that accidentally got pregnant from one of your one night stands".

I buried my face into Ryker's shoulder from embarrassment and Ryker rolled his eyes "Really Leah..."?

"I call being the godmother"! Liz shot up, and I shook my head "Elizabeth Doyle"!

"What?" She asked innocently "It's bound to happen..I mean the you and Ryker having kids part.."

Remind me why I got myself into this?

# Chapter 3

"Landon"! I yelled and jumped on his back "Give me my phone"!

"What? Are you sexting your boyfriend"? He teased, and I rolled my eyes "No! Now give it back! Now!"

Today was Friday, and I had school.

I was texting Alex, because she was supposedly coming to see me. I got off Landon's back and he turned around and rolled his eyes "Fine. Here" and handed me my phone.

I huffed and kicked him in the shin then walking away as he groaned in pain. I stuck my tongue out at him childishly and walked upstairs to "my room".

I hummed to the beat of the music playing on my speakers, as I did my homework. I was stuck at Becker, Beverly, and Landon's today; and was on "restriction" because I came home past "curfew" last night.

"Say it ain't so, your drug is a heart-breaker, Say it ain't so, my love is a life taker" I sang in a soft voice as I wrote down the line of my paper, and thought about what to write next.

My phone buzzed and I picked it up, and saw it was a text message.

Liz: Heya Chica! You coming out tonight??

Oh right...they're all going out to some bar, and drinking tonight, then heading back to the warehouse.

Me: Nah, can't. I broke "curfew", so I'm grounded from my own cousins....

Liz: :( ....But Ryker won't have anyone to dance with....

I rolled my eyes at the text, and responded back.

Me: I think he'll be fine, Liz -_-

Liz: Whatever you say.....I mean, but with all those girls there...and their minimal clothing....

Me: ELIZABETH!! Stop!!

Liz: Fine -_- I got to go, Neil is being annoying...

Me: Bye

Liz: BYE!!!!

I put my phone down and went back to my essay, and already started to get bored again, just from trying to think about the essay.

There was a knock at my door, and I turned around to see Ryker, and he leaned up against my doorway and shoved his hands in his pockets.

I blinked slowly a few times and stood up from my bed "Oh...hey" and walked up to him "I didn't know you were coming.."

"Yeah..well" He trailed off and walked in "I was in town, and I called Beverly, and she said you were grounded".

I rolled my eyes at what Beverly said, and Ryker pecked my lips and his lips tugged up into a half smile/smirk "Hey princess".

I cocked an eyebrow at him "You seem....off.....what are you planning, Anderson"?

He laced his fingers through mine "Nothing.." He said pretending to be innocent "Can't a guy, just come to see his girlfriend without being questioned"?

He narrowed his bright blue eyes at me and I shook my head "No", causing him to roll his eyes in response.

There was a few moments of silence that went by, and I stared at the collar of his t-shirt.

"Sneak out tonight"?

"And there it is" I said, looking up at Ryker and tearing away from him.

"Oh come on, Rain! You're 18, you shouldn't have people breathing down your neck and telling you what you can and can't do in the first place"! He exclaimed.

I shook my head "No. I'm not sneaking out". I then heard the front door open and shut and my brother's voices.

My eyes widened, and Ryker's lips tugged into a smirk which plastered across his face.

"Ryker Xavier Anderson! Don't you dare even try"! I warned and he smirked and gave an amused look "How about we ask your brothers.." then walking out, and down the steps.

"Ryker! Ryker! Don't you dare"! I yelled and chased after him. He went to the kitchen and I ran down the steps and tripped at the last one and fell.

"Ow" I groaned and rubbed my head, then getting up and running to the kitchen.

I saw Jax, Ryan, Joel, Landon, Becker, and Beverly all standing around the kitchen and talking, and Ryker's smirk grew.

Their heads all whipped up to us, and Ryker pulled me in front of him and wrapped his arms around my waist "Can Rain go out with the gang and I"?

"No-" I started but Ryker put a hand over my mouth and my words muffled under his hand.

My brothers all looked at each other with unease, and Joel scratched the back of his neck "I don't know if thats such a good idea..."

Ryker rolled his eyes "She'll be with me, and she'll be fine".

"That doesn't help" Jax glared at Ryker "I don't want the thought of my baby sister becoming in-pregnanted"

"I'm not going to sleep with her" Ryker said and rolled his eyes in annoyance, and I stomped on his foot and he sent me a glare.

"Guys just let her go...." Bev said "She's legally an adult, she won't be protected by you guys forever".

They all looked at each other as if they were communicating through their eyes.

* * * * * *

"Not funny" I said and Ryker smirked "You're right...its hilarious", and I scoffed at him in response. He placed his hands on my hips as I was over-top of him with my knees on either side of him. He pecked my lips, and I smiled.

"So have you talked to the asshole, who deserves to burn in hell"? Ryker asked as he tried to not get angry just at the thought.

"Hey, he may be an asshole but he's still my father" I said as I narrowed my eyes at him, and he snaked his arms around my waist.

"Father my ass..." He scoffed, and I stopped for a second "Ryk..."

"Hmm"? He asked and I asked "Why have I never met your parents or ever heard you talking about them..."?

He sighed in frustration "I knew that question was coming..."

"Well, I've never met your parents..you've never even mentioned them...".

"Rain...my parents aren't in the picture, they walked out a couple years ago and couldn't afford kids..." He explained.

I blinked slowly "Oh...Ryker, I'm so sorry-I didn't know-"

He cut me off and shook his head "It's fine Rain" as he tucked a loose strand of hair behind my ear "They died awhile back in a car accident".

My eyes widened "Ryk, that's horrible!" His lips tugged up into a small smile "Princess, don't worry. It's fine..."

The door opened and Joel walked in, I quickly got off Ryker and Joel's eyes went dark "Rain..."

"What"? I asked innocently, and he shook his head "Never-mind, just wanted to say I'm leaving". I stood up from my bed and walked over to him. He pulled me into a hug and whispered "You get pregnant, and I'll kill you".

I kicked him in the shin, and pulled away "Bye Joel". "Bye" He kissed my forehead and turned to Ryker "You-keep your hands to yourself".

Ryker smirked "Will see" then wrapped his arms around my waist, and resting his chin on my shoulder.

Joel walked out and slammed the door, making me jump in response.

* * * * * * * ** *

I walked into the line of the club, and the security guard asked "I.D."? I handed it to him and he examined it, then nodding and handing it back to me.

I walked into the bar that full of people; grinding, making out, dancing, and drinking. There were lights flashing everywhere and music blasted through the speakers. I made my way through the crowd of people and searched for someone I knew.

I saw Liz, Ryker, Peter, and Neil up at the bar talking. I walked up and Liz turned and smiled "Oh Hey"!

"Hey" I said and offered a small smile, Ryker pecked my lips and leaned down and whispered in my ear "Thanks for coming, I know you hate bars".

I looked up at him and he gave me a quick kiss on my lips and put a hand to my lower back and rubbed circles.

I bit my lip, at how much alcohol I was surrounded by, and I just kept thinking of how my dad drinks and it always ends up bad.

"Come on" Liz nodded her head towards the dance floor "Let's go dance" then grabbing my wrist and pulling me out to the center in the middle of everyone.

Liz started dancing and I just stood there unamused, and she rolled her eyes "Oh come on! Loosen up, have some fun"!

I rolled my eyes and sighed, and she grabbed my hands and moved my arms to make me dance, and try to get me to move.

* * * * * * * *

It's been an hour or two, and I finally gave into dancing.

"TALK TO ME BABY!" The whole crowd screamed the lyrics to songs, and Liz and I jumped up and down and did the fist pump dance thing..

"HOPING WE CAN CAKE BY THE OCEAN"! The crowd continued to scream, and Liz twirled me and I laughed in response.

Ryker and Peter walked out to us, and I smirked at Liz as her cheeks flushed red. Peter stood across from Liz, and I body-checked Liz into Peter; because I'm a good friend.

She stumbled onto his chest, and Peter asked nervously as he scratched the back of his neck "Wanna dance"?

Liz nodded slightly as her face was bright red, and Peter pulled her away off into the crowd. I turned around to face Ryker, and he gave me amused look "Meddling in people's love lives now"?

I rolled my eyes "I prefer 'Helping' over meddling" I chuckled, and his lips tugged up to a small smile, and my heart raced at just his smile.

I looked over to the bar and Craig waved us over, and Ryker started to walk over. I grabbed his hand and he stopped then turning back to me.

"Ryk.." I said quietly and placed my hands flat on his chest as I looked down at the ground and pursed my lips "Please don't drink a lot".

He pressed his lips in a thin line, and tilted my chin up with his index finger "Babe....Okay, I won't. You know I wouldn't ever do anything like your dad does to you".

I nodded slightly "I know...I just-". He cut me off "You don't have to say anything, I won't get drunk; I promise".

"Thank you Ryker" I pursed my lips, and he said "No problem, now give me a kiss". I smiled and he pulled me into a kiss, and his hands snaked around my waist and I smiled against his lips.

I pulled away and let out a small laugh, and Ryker pulled me over to Craig. Craig handed Ryker a drink, but Ryker declined it and shook his head "Nah, I'm cutting back".

"Since when has Ryker Xavier Anderson ever declined or cut back on a drink"? Vince and Neil said shocked.

Ryker rolled his eyes and flipped them off. Leah came up to me and smiled "Hey, I haven't seen you all night" and pulled me into a quick hug.

"Hey" I greeted over the blasting music, and she asked "How's your cousins"? I shrugged in response "It's okay...I'd rather have my own room back, but oh well".

Ryker then slung an arm over my shoulder and looked at Leah "Le..chill on the drinks". She was mid-way drunk, and only needed a few more drinks. She didn't look drunk, but her attitude was very bubbly and giggly.

She made a face at him, and took a sip of her beer. Ryker took the black snap-back that was placed backwards on my head and placed it backwards on my head.

I was sitting at the bar, as I was talking to Liz and a drunk Leah. A song came on, and it was a slow song.

"This song goes out to all you love birds here tonight" The DJ said, and couples went to the dance-floor, and were so close they were on-top of each other.

"Go" Liz said trying to get me to go over to Ryker, and I shook my head "There's no way in hell I'm going over there"!

"Ryker"! Liz yelled, and Ryker came out of the conversation he was in with Will and came over, and I buried my face in my hands in embarrassment.

"Take your girlfriend out there" Liz said, and Ryker narrowed his eyes at her "You know I don't slow dance".

"Yeah, well tonight you do. Now go" She said and pushed me into Ryker, and he caught me by the waist "You okay"? He asked and I nodded "Yeah, I'm fine" and sent Liz a glare.

"Go!" Liz exclaimed and Ryker rolled his eyes then taking my hand and pulling me out and wrapping his arms around my waist and I wrapped my arms around his neck, and we were chest to chest as there was no distance between us at all.

I laid my head on his shoulder and we just swayed back and fourth. "You know I'm going to kill Liz for this later" Ryker said.

"I'll help" I spoke, and he snuck his hands under the bottom of my shirt and placed his cold hands on my bare skin.

I shivered and he smirked "My hands cold"?

I nodded "Yeah, but my mom always use to say something". "And what is that"? Ryker asked as he pressed his forehead to mine.

"Cold Hands, Warm Heart".

He smiled and pressed his lips softly to mine.

# Chapter 4

I got out of the truck and shut the passenger seat as everyone got out.

I opened Rain's door and she was peacefully asleep.

I reached over and unbuckled her then sliding my hands under her picking her up.

"Come on, Rain baby" I said and she laid her head on my shoulder as I carried her bridal style up to the warehouse.

It was 2 a.m. and we're just getting back to the warehouse, and Rain passed out on the way to the warehouse.

I carried her all the way up to the main room and everyone was taking off their coats and shoes. I laid her down on the couch and started to walk away when she grabbed my hand.

I turned around to her and knelt down, and she opened her eyes slowly, and I said softly "Go back to sleep, princess".

She pursed her lips and I kissed her forehead and stood up am then grabbing a blanket and pulling it over her so she could go back to sleep.

I walked to the kitchen and grabbed a water-bottle from the fridge.

"I haven't seen Leah this hammered in forever" Reece said, and I clenched my jaw "Yeah..I know...."

Craig walked in and grabbed a beer from the fridge, then cracking it open and downing it.

"Dude" Reece said sounding annoyed, and Craig snapped "What"?

"Never-mind..." Reece sighed and I shook my head at Craig and scoffed.

I went back out to the "living room" and everyone was getting ready to go to their "rooms".

Rain was still peacefully asleep with her eyes closed gently and lips pursed. I knelt down to her and caressed her cheeks, and her eyes slowly fluttered open.

"Wanna sleep in my room"? I asked her softly, and she nodded but was still half asleep.

I picked her up and carried down the hall, to my room. I pushed the door open and set her down on the bed.

Bed was sitting up straight and looked tired as ever, and her eyes were droopy.

I untied her gray converses and slid them off her feet, and she yawned.

I smiled to myself at how cute she was when she was tired.

I went to unbutton her jeans but she grabbed my hands and I looked up at her and her eyes were filled with sadness and worry.

"Rain...it's just me. I'm not going to do anything" I assured softly and tucked a piece of hair behind her ear.

She bit her lip and looked down, and still had a grip on my hands. I pressed my lips softly to hers, and pushed her back onto the bed.

She closed her eyes softly and placed her hands flat on my chest.

* * * * * * * * * * *

<^> Rain Thompson <^>

~ 1 week later ~

"I'm borderline happy, and borderline sad" I sang under my breath as I pulled up to the warehouse and saw all the guys outside; working on their cars.

I parked and got out of my truck and slamming the door shut, I walked up to where Neil and Vince were.

"What up, Thompson" Vince smiled and fist bumped me, and I laughed "Nothing". Neil pulled me into a hug "We missed you this pass week".

I pulled away and nodded "Yeah, I missed you guys too; but brother's orders" I rolled my eyes at the thought. I haven't seen anyone in the gang for the past week, because my brothers ordered that I would stay at Landon, Becker, and Beverly's because my dad was out for the past week searching.

I felt a pair of arms wrap around my neck and pull me back, making me stumble a bit. I smiled and turned around to face Ryker. He pulled me into a tight hug "I missed you".

"I missed you too" I said and he gave me a quick kiss. "Rain"! Liz yelled then running up and tackling me into a hug, and pushed me over on to the dirty ground with stones all over it.

"Ow, Liz" I said and she bit her lip "Sorry" as she stood up and put a hand out to me, which I took and she helped me up.

"You left me..here...to suffer...with...6 guys..." She accused. "You had Leah" I pointed out, and Liz shifted uncomfortably "Right".

Ryker cocked an eyebrow at her and she shook her head "Nothing". I gave her a confused look, and she said "Well I'll be inside" then jogging back inside.

Craig came up and Ryker slung an arm over my shoulders "Hey Rain. How was lock-down"? I sent Craig a glare "Horrible".

"Well we have a trade route with all the gangs tonight, and I'm warning you; if you say anything to piss them off you're dead..literally".

I rolled my eyes "Yeah, yeah". "Well I have to talk to Rain about something.." Ryker trailed off, then grabbing my arm and pulling me to the side of the warehouse where no-one was.

He pushed me back up against the wall and smashed his lips into mine, and I smiled against his lips, as I slid my arms around his neck. His tongue slid across my teeth asking for entry, and I granted it to him. He pulled out on my bottom lip, and I pulled away when my phone went off.

I sighed and pulled out my phone to see Jax's number flashing on my screen.

"Hello"? I answered.

"Hey, where are you going to be home tonight"? He asked.

"No, I have a thing with the guys, Leah and Liz" I answered.

"Ok, just let me know you're home safe then later" He said.

"Will do. Bye Joel, love you" I responded.

"Bye, Love you sis" Then he hung up. I looked at Ryker and he cocked an eyebrow "Oh..Just Joel being the overprotective brother he is.."

"Rain"! A voice squealed, and I looked to see Melanie run up to me and I picked her up and hugged her tightly as I spun her in a circle "Ahah, Hey kiddo".

"How's school"? I asked her and she grinned "Good! I got a part in a play! I'm a fairy!"

I smiled and gave her a high five "That's awesome Mel", and she giggled in response. I handed her over to Ryker, and he held her.

"I'm going to go see Leah, I'll be out in a bit" I said and pecked his lips, then jogging around the warehouse and inside then running up the stairs. I pushed the door open and saw Leah standing as she was typing on her phone.

"Hey-a"! I greeted and her head snapped up to me and she smiled then pulling me into a tight hug "Hey, I missed you. And I couldn't stand hearing Ryker talk about you for one or more minute".

I chuckled, and pulled away. "So...how was your little break from the gang"? She laughed, but I saw there was sadness in her eyes and something was bugging her.

"Leah, what's wrong"? I asked as I titled my head to the side and gave her a confused look.

"What? Nothing's wrong.." She trailed off but her voice cracked, and Liz came out with a glass of water and handed it Leah.

"Yes, there is something wrong" I said, and she sighed as she shook her head "Rain..It doesn't concern you, you shouldn't have to be involved in it, you're only 18..."

I swallowed hard and blinked slowly a few times "I'm 18..not 8..I'm a legal adult, you know you can tell me". Leah and Liz looked at each other, as Leah's eyes got pricked with tears.

"Rain..." Liz sighed "Will talk about this later, there's leftovers from last night dinners you can go have some". I mumbled "You sound like my mother did" then walking into the kitchen.

I opened the fridge and grabbed the box of pizza and took a slice out and the door swung up to the guys coming in.

"So how was your vacation"? Neil teased and I rolled my eyes "It was not a vacation. I had to deal 3 brothers and 3 cousins that are all overprotective..they went through all my messages" then turning to Ryker and accusing "Which you did not help me case".

Ryker's lips tugged up into a cocky smirk as Melanie tugged at his hand and he turned his attention towards her. "Hey, you chose to date him..when you say yes, you sign up for the perverted comments" Vince said as he narrowed his eyes at me.

"So how many detentions did you get"? Peter laughed, and my phone started to vibrate on the kitchen counter, and I glanced at it then seeing who was calling.

I bit my lip and tried to ignore it as I just stared at the guys and tired to swipe it to decline without being obvious.

"Aren't you going to answer that"? Will asked and all the guys raised an eyebrow. I bit my lip "Uh...oh yeah, right" then picking up my phone and answering the call.

"H-Hi" I stuttered.

"Oh wow, you actually answered" Blake's cocky voice rang through the phone.

I swallowed hard and shifted in my spot "W-what do you w-want, I'm b-busy" I stuttered throughout the whole sentence.

"Stutter, much"? Blake said and Ryker gave me a suspicious look then grabbing my phone from my hand and his eyes widened and jaw clenched as his hands clutched into a fist.

"RAIN"! He yelled, and I flinched at his yelling "I mean you did tell me to answer the phone..."

He then stormed out with my phone and of the warehouse, and back outside.

I ran after him and yelled "Ryker! Ryker! Ryker"!

I heard him grit into the phone "Listen here you motherfucker! Leave Rain alone or I'll-"

I quickly grabbed my phone back from Ryker's hand and hung up the call.

"Ryker! What the hell?! You don't have the right to just take my phone! That's privacy"!

"Oh don't play that card! Why was he calling you"?! He yelled.

I crossed my arms and narrowed my eyes at him "I'm just going to wait till you calm down".

* * * * * * * * *

"Guys, you know I hate shopping" I groaned as Liz and Leah dragged me into the mall.

"Oh Hush up, you need to get out for awhile" Liz stated "You don't have that much of a social life anymore".

"Do to"! I scoffed and they rolled their eyes as they continued to drag my through the mall.

"Now I have to get a new dress for a wedding for my cousin" Leah stated "Oh, Rain; didn't Ryker invite you to that"?

I raised an eyebrow and shook my head "No.."

"Ugh! Darn that boy.." Leah grumbled.

"Darn"? I questioned and did a double take.

Leah bit her lip and nodded "Uh yeah..I'm trying to cut back on cursing..".

"So that dress" Liz cut in.

Ryker: Idc

Me: Oh really? So your not upset that Blake called me for one of his booty-call calls...???

Ryker: RAIN!

Me: Yeah 'Don't care' at all.. -_-

Ryker: You're so furating

Me: Well isn't that the pot calling the Kettle black

Ryker: Oh shut up, that's such a mom joke

Me: Haha XD

Ryker: I gtg, Melanie keeps bugging me, I'll see you when you get back.

Me: Ok, bye

"How does this one look"? Leah's voice asked as she walked out of the dressing room with a blue sher dress.

I furrowed my eyebrows "Leah..that's three times your size".

"Uh..yeah..I'm gonna get tacked" She bit her lip.

"Why? They have that dress in your size...it's right over there" I said as I started to stand up but she shook her head "No, no, it's fine".

"Okay then.."I mumbled under my breath as I knew something was up.

We were walking out to the parking lot when Leah stopped me "Rain".

I stopped and turned around to face her.

"Leah..I just want to get make to the warehouse" I groaned.

"I-I...I um.." She trailed off.

I raised an eyebrow "Yes Leah"?

She looked down at the ground and Liz put a hand on her shoulder for moral support.

"I'm------" She said then mumbling the last part, so I couldn't here.

"What"? I asked.

She looked up at me and sighed "I'm pregnant".

My eyes widened and jaw dropped "WHAT"?!

She nodded slightly "Yeah...".

"PREGNANT"?! I exclaimed and was in a state of shock.

# Chapter 5

"I'm------" Leah said then mumbling the last part, so I couldn't here.

"What"? I asked.

She looked up at me and sighed "I'm pregnant".

My eyes widened and jaw dropped "WHAT"?!

She nodded slightly "Yeah...".

"PREGNANT"?! I exclaimed and was in a state of shock.

"Rain...you have to promise me that you won't tell Ryker! Or any of the guys" She pleaded.

"I-I...Who's the dad"? I asked.

Leah doesn't have a boyfriend..so it must have happened from a one night stand.

"Do you remember last week when we all got back from the club and I was hammered"? She asked and I nodded slowly "Yeah..drunk is an understatement".

"Well I ended up spending the night in Craig's room, and one thing just kinda of led to another..." She trailed off.

My eyes widened and jaw dropped "Craig?! Craig is the Baby Daddy"?!

She sighed and looked off to the side "I hate that word, 'Baby Daddy'."

"I can't believe this" I muttered and ran a hand through my hair, and grabbed my skateboard out of the back of Liz's trunk "I'll see you guys later".

"Rain! Rain! Rain"! They yelled my name but I ignored it and skated down the road.

I can't keep this secret from Ryker..he's going to kill me once he finds out because he's going to know that I knew..

My mind flooded with thoughts, and I swerved through traffic of cars as I went through the city.

* * * * * * * * * *

I took a deep breath as I stared at the doors of my house, and stood on the top step as my hand clasped around the doorknob.

I opened it and it creaked open, and it was dead silent. It was odd, because the house use to always be filled with sounds. I stepped inside and a chill went up my spine.

"Dad"? I asked in a yell to see if he was home.

No answer.

I walked out back, and saw the pool opened up and I went to slip my converses off when a door slid open. I whirled around to see my dad.

"Are you trespassing"!? He yelled and I tensed up "No, I live here too.."

He clenched his jaw, and grabbed a trash bag that was sitting on the ground and walked up to me "Well if you live here, then you can take the trash out".

I swallowed hard and stared at him for a moment, then taking the trash bag and walking over to the gate and walking over to throw the trash away.

I kept glancing up from my textbook and at my dad who was chopping up some vegetables. I was at the island counter doing some homework, and my dad was making dinner.

We were both dead silent, and he hasn't said anything.

Something's not right..

"So...Rowan called.." My dad trailed off as he broke the silence. My eyes widened and my heart stopped as I dropped my pencil and head snapped up to him.

Rowan is my mom.

"What"!? I exclaimed and, he nodded as he continued to chop up a tomato "She wanted to talk to you, and I said you weren't home".

Tears pricked my eyes, and I looked down and pursed my lips.

She wants to talk to me...

"Well, can I have her number"!? I asked, and he looked up at me and gave me a warning look "I'll only give it to you, if you don't say anything about why you ran away or whats been going on".

I nodded "Okay! Okay! I promise". He nodded his head towards the fridge "It's taped up". I got up and went to the fridge then grabbing the paper with her number on it. I quickly took my phone out and dialed Ryker's number, since I know it by heart.

"Hey, can you pick me up"? I asked since my truck was still at the warehouse.

I got a text from Ryker saying he's here, and I quickly grabbed my bag and ran out of the house and down the driveway and opened the passenger seat, and slammed the door shut.

"What the hell are you doing here"?! Ryker yelled, as anger filled his voice. "Ryk, my mom called"! I said excitedly.

His eyes widened "Oh my God! Rain, that's great"! He gave me a quick kiss, and I grinned "I know, she called and said she wanted to talk to me. My dad gave me her number".

"That's great princess, but I'm still not going to ignore the fact on why you were here..with your dad..alone" He narrowed his eyes at me.

"Nervous"? Will asked and I nodded slightly and bit my lip. My mom said she would Skype me in 1 more minute, and I've only sent her a text.

"It'll be fine..She's your mom" Peter smiled. "Yeah.. mom's are the best, I don't know what I'd do without mine" Neil laughed.

I saw Leah shift uncomfortably in her seat, and I turned my attention back to my laptop which was set on the coffee table. Ryker walked in and sat down on the couch next to me and handed me a water bottle.

"Thank you" I mumbled and unscrewed the cap then taking a sip. My laptop then started to ring as I saw my mom's name appear, and I spit my water out.

"Aww, Rain! Goddamn it" Ryker muttered and sent me a glare as I got water all over his shirt. "Sorry" I gave him apologetic smile. He rolled his eyes and pulled his t-shirt over his head and threw it to the side.

I hit the accept call button and it opened up to my mom. Tears immediately pricked my eyes and I put a hand over my mouth from shock, and she smiled "Hey, sweetie".

Everyone watched me and smiled. Ryker rubbed circles on my back, and I bit my lip and managed to get out "Hey, mom".

"My gosh, you've grown so much" She chuckled, and I nodded slightly "Yeah, I have" and laughed. Ryker looked at me and sent me a smile.

I saw she had tears in her eyes, and Vince called out "Ok! Now tell us all Rain's embarrassing childhood stories"! and he came behind the couch to look into the laptop screen.

My mom gave a small smile "Well look who's made some friends". They all stood up and got in the frame of the screen.

"This is Craig, Leah, Neil, Liz, Peter, Will, Vince, and Ryker" I introduced, and she stared at Ryker for a moment "You're my daughter's boyfriend, aren't you"?

Ryker leaned forward so he was closer to the laptop "Yes mam, I am". She nodded "I knew you would be, I could tell by the way you just looked at her".

My cheeks flushed red, and I looked at Ryker and he tensed up and became stiff.

<^> Ryker Anderson <^>

"You can tell Rain really loves her mom" Peter said as he took a bite of the apple he had in his hand, and I nodded then cracking open a beer "Yeah, she does".

"Does she know about your parents"? Craig asked curiously, and I snapped my heads towards him and made sure Rain wasn't listening to us as she was out in the living room; still talking to her mom.

"No! And she's not going to! I told her they were in a car accident, and that's all she needs to know" I warned "And I swear to God if you tell her-".

"It's not good to base your relationship off lies, Ryker!" Liz accused me, and I rolled my eyes "Yeah well..I really don't need her worrying about me".

"So you're not going to tell her that your parents are somewhere out in North Carolina, and that they had to give you, Leah, Reece, Faith, and Melanie up because they couldn't afford to have kids, and that you've been through abusive foster cares, and that's where Faith and Melanie are"? Vince questioned.

"Exactly. I just don't need Rain to worry, and that's what she's going to do. Rain's the type of girl to worry about other people before herself" I stated.

My parents live in North Carolina now, and so does the rest of my family and when I was 8 my parent's had to get rid of Leah who was 14, Reece who was 7, and Faith who was 3 at the time, and we were all split up when we got to foster homes. Then a couple years later Melanie was born, and my parents had to get rid of her too, and I luckily got her to be in the same foster home I was in; since she was just a baby. I haven't talked to my parents in years....but now my mom and dad are divorced, and they don't really talk anymore. I refuse to see them, because they put me through absolute hell, and they never tried get us back.

"You so Love her" Peter teased, and I rolled my eyes then taking a sip of my beer "I do not love her".

"Seriously?" Vince scoffed "You should see the way you look at her. I rolled my eyes again, and Craig spoke up "Hey, where's Leah"?

"I think in the bathroom..why"? Liz answered. Craig shrugged "No Reason..she just seems a bit off today".

"We got to get going, we have the trading route" Neil stated and we all nodded in agreement. I set the beer down on the counter and walked out to the living room where Rain has been laying on the couch; and talking to her mom for the past 3 hours.

"Rain, we got go" I said and she frowned at me, and I narrowed my eyes at her. "5 more minutes"? She asked as she batted her eyelashes.

She's such a kid..

"No" I said stern and she sighed "Fine" then turning back to screen "I got to go mom, I'll talk to you sometime soon"?

Her mom nodded and smiled "Bye Rain, love you". "Love you too" Rain smiled then hitting the end call button. I picked Rain up bridal style and spun her around in a circle and she laughed. I set her down on the ground and she wrapped her arms around my neck, as mine snaked around her waist.

"Happy"? I asked her, and she grinned "That's an understatement".

"Well I'm glad, that you got to talk to your mom" I said and pecked her lips.

"Me too" She chirped with a grin still on her face.

"Let's go love birds, we have to get going" Craig hurried as everyone walked out of the warehouse, and Rain grabbed her leather jacket and through it on over her white t-shirt.

* * * * * * *

<^> Rain Thompson <^>

We came to another warehouse, and we were on the border of where New York and New Jersey meet.

"Alright, Rain. Watch what you say" Craig ordered as he gave me a warning look.

"Or..even better just don't talk" Reece smirked and I smacked his arm.

Craig rolled his eyes "Stay close to Ryker, got it"?

"Yes, sir" I said, and when Craig turned around I stuck my tongue out at him and Ryker chuckled, then slinging an arm over my shoulder and pulling me closer to him.

We started to walk in, and I could already tell there was a lot of gangs here.

We headed up the metal stairs, and I started to get nervous.

Ryker then grabbed my hand and pulled me to the side and pushed me back up against a wall "I'm not suppose to tell you this" He whisper as he kept glancing over to the side.

"But they take all the new gang members of each gang, and test them; by surprise" Ryker whispered and took my hands in his "You're going to have to fight one of the guys".

My eyes widened "What"?!

"Shhh" Ryker shhh-ed me as he put a hand over my mouth "You're going to be fine, I promise. If it gets out of hand, I'll beat the guys ass".

I nodded slightly and gulped. He kissed my forehead "You'll be fine, princess. Just don't tell anyone, I told you or I'll get shot or something".

My eyes widened again "Why would you risk telling me then"?!

"Because I don't want my girlfriend to get hurt" He narrowed his eyes at me.

We then walked in, and I became overwhelmed by how many gangs were here.

The guys all stood with their jaws clenched, fist clenched and looking "tough". They all looked like they could snap me with their pinky finger.

Ryker and I joined the rest of the gang, and I was pushed up into the front between Leah and Liz, and all the guys were behind us.

I put my hand behind my back and Ryker took it, and intertwined our fingers.

"Welcome! To the annual Gang Trade Routing"! A guy with a beard and biceps that were bigger then my head walked out to the center.

"For all you Newbies" He smirked creepily "Welcome, and pay attention".

Ryker squeezed my hand to reassure me.

"Crusades" The same guy who has been "hosting" called.

It's been about a hour and a half and I haven't let go of Ryker's hand once..

Craig stepped out into the center to where the guy was. "Any new memebers"? He asked.

Craig nodded sternly, and I tensed up.

"Name"? He asked.

"Rain Thompson" Craig stated and I bit my lip.

Here we go..

The guy looked up from the papers he was holding and so did all other gangs and they gave suspicious looks.

"A girl"? He asked and Craig nodded sternly again.

"Alright...Then get her over here" He smirked.

Craig turned to look at me and Ryker squeezed my hand one last time, then I walked slowly out, as everyone's eyes were on me.

"Well..well..look what we have here" He smirked "I'm Gale, it's a pleasure to meet you Rain".

"I wish I could say the same" I gave him a tight smile, and everyone blinked slowly as they didn't expect that.

"Well someone's got a mouth on her" Gale stated then snapping his fingers "Manny".

A man that was probably about 27, with blond hair and brown eyes and he was pretty built came out.

I gulped silently and Gale stepped back. Manny then clutched his fist and then went to throw a punch.

I quickly caught his fist in my hand, and then kicking him in the balls.

He groaned in pain, and I turned his arm back to a 360° and pushed him down to the ground.

Everyone stared shocked, and I saw Gale snap his fingers "Joe".

Another guy came out and I quickly got off Manny and Joe went to send a punch but I kicked him in the gut; which sent him flying backwards.

He hit a wall and slid down it, then another guy came out and wrapped his arms around my neck from behind.

I grabbed his arms and dug my nails into them, as I dropped to the ground, and his grip came off me.

I kicked him in the shin, and he hissed in pain then falling to the ground.

I quickly stood up again as another guy came out and threw me over his shoulder, then running up and slamming my back up against a hard brick wall.

I groaned in pain, and I saw Ryker tense up and clutch his fist as his eyes were almost black.

I bit the guys shoulder and he dropped me on the ground.

I stood up, and everyone's eyes were boring into me.

Then Blake came out with a cocky smirk on his face "Hey Thompson".

I saw the guys grab Ryker and restrain him back.

"Monroe" I retorted in a scoff.

"See..here's the thing..You can't win at everything you do" then he threw a punch at my face and his knuckles went across my cheekbone, and it had so much force behind it, that I fell.

I put a hand up to my cheek, and looked up at Blake with a glare.

The thing about Blake was...he wasn't afraid to hit a girl, and especially me..

I stood up and went to throw a punch at him but he quickly caught my fist and tsked, then flipping me over and me body hit the hard cement ground.

"Ow" I groaned as I felt paralyzed for a moment from the pain.

"What? THAT ALL YOU GOT, THOMPSON"?! He screamed at me, and I flinched at the yelling, then forcing myself to stand up.

I quickly threw a punch to his jaw and kicked him in the gut which made him stumble back a bit.

He looked up at me with anger in his eyes then throwing a punch at me, and he busted my lip open, and I was sure to have a black eye.

I grabbed him by the shirt and kneed him where the sun don't shine. He immediately grabbed that area and yelled "Fuck"!

He was bent over in pain, so I punched him one more time in the face; right on the top of his nose, to try and give him a concussion.

He dropped to the ground, and everyone was dead silent and eyes on me. My heart was pumping fast and I tried to steady my breath.

"You chose a good one, Brown" Gale nodded at Craig. Craig nodded strictly then beckoning me over.

I walked over and Ryker immediately grabbed my hand and pulled me out of the room.

He grabbed my face in his hands, and rubbed his thumb on my bruised cheek "Oh my God, Rain!"

"Ryk..I'm fine" I assured, and he just pulled me into his chest with a tight hug.

"Princess, I don't like seeing you get hurt" Ryker whispered as he ran his hand through the back of my hair "And-"

"Don't say it" I stopped him, and he sighed. "Ryker, I'm not quitting the gang" I stated sternly.

"Rain, one of these times its going to be serious and I won't be able to do anything about it. And I hated just standing by and watching Blake best you up without being able to do anything" He exclaimed.

"I'm fine" I assured and grabbed his hands in mine, then our fingers intertwined. He pressed his lips to mine softly, and I gave right into his kiss.

His hands slid around my waist, and I pressed my palms flat on his chest. He pulled on mu upper lip, and I smiled to myself.

"Aww, look how cute" A voice mocked, and I pulled away from Ryker and turned to see Rhett and Blake standing there with the rest of their gang behind them.

"You know..I really thought you two would end up together" Rhett smirked creepily "I mean you can see how protective Ryker is of you...it'd be a shame to see anything happen to you..."

Ryker face was cold and his eyes went almost black, and he grabbed Rhett by his shirt and slammed him up against the wall "You fucking touch her, I won't fucking hesitate to tear you to little pieces and burn them".

# Chapter 6

"Yeah, it's fine. My brothers are home" I assured everyone as we walked up my driveway and they weren't sure about coming because of my dad and they didn't want me to get hit. I took my keys out my back pockets, and put it in the door then unlocking it and walking in and everyone followed behind me.

"When you see my face, hope it gives you hell, gives you hell" I heard Joel's voice sing quietly as he came jogging down the stairs then stopping in place as his eyes widened and gave a horrified look, and I smirked "All-American Rejects...Nice" I winked playfully.

"God Damn it, Rain" Joel muttered and I laughed, and Joel nodded at everyone "Sister stealers". I flipped Joel off, and he shook his head as he laughed then picking me up and throwing me over his shoulder.

"Joel" I laughed "Put me down" I continued to laugh, and Joel placed me down on the ground, then I saw my dad come out from his study and he stopped "Oh..Company".

"Sheriff" Liz greeted with a small smile, to not make things awkward. My dad grabbed me by the arm and I flinched as he pulled me over to him and whispered into my ear "I'm going down to the station, I'll be back tomorrow. If anything happens, you're so dead".

I swallowed hard, and nodded in agreement. He let go of my arm and grabbed his coat then walking out of the house.

"OH THANK GOD! I THOUGHT HE'D NEVER LEAVE"! I exclaimed in relief.

Liz and I screamed lyrics to hits of 2010 that played on the speakers and the guys were all in the pool; including my brothers; who were actually getting along with the guys..without the exception of Ryker, because Ryker will always be dead to them.

Liz was also trying to get Leah to go swimming but Leah was fighting it. I felt a cold pair of arms wrap around my waist, and Ryker whisper into my ear "Hey princess".

I chuckled as my cheeks turned a tint of red, and I turned around to face Ryker, and pecked his lips. "Hey! Get your hands off my sister"! Jax's voice yelled and Jax threw a pool toy thing that you put in the water and sinks to the bottom, but Ryker caught it without even trying and smirked at Jax "Better work on your throwing, because this is how you throw".

Then Ryker picked me up and walked to the edge of the pool. "Ryker! Don't you dare!" I warned and glared at him. He smirked "Sorry, babe" then throwing me into the pool and I held my breath as I made contact with the water and went under and closed my eyes.

I swam up for air and Ryker smirked cockily down at me. I glared at him, and he jumped in, and he pulled me under the water once I caught my breath, and he pressed his lips to mine while we were under the water.

We all sat around in circle on the outside furniture as there was a fire in the middle and it was around 1 a.m. and we were all just relaxing outside. I for one was exhausted and was about to pass out any minute now, and I was struggling to keep my eyes awake and I laid my head on Ryker's shoulder.

He wrapped an arm around me and laid his head on-top of mine as everyone was silent and stared at the flames of the fire. He kissed the top of my head, and my phone started to go off. I took out and saw Faith's contact flashing on my screen.

I gave a confused look, and everyone raised eyebrows at me. I answered and put my phone up to my ear "Hello"?

"Rain! Rain!" Faith started and I could tell she had been crying.

"Whoa, whoa, calm down" I said calmly then standing up "Tell me what's wrong".

"I got a ride home from this guy from a party, and he tried to have sex with me, but I said no and he...well....he tried to make me, and I got out of the car and now I'm on the side of the road off of Lance Street, and I couldn't call Reece, Ryker, or Leah; because they'd kill me, and I'm freaking out here Rain, and I have no idea what to do" She cried as she rambled.

"Ok, Ok" I sighed as I ran a hand through my hair "I'll be right there, don't move".

"Ryk, would you just calm down"!? I exclaimed as I kept my eyes out for Faith. "Calm down!? You want me to fucking calm down!? My little sister was just sexually harassed, and you want me to calm down"!? He yelled as he slammed his hands on the steering wheel.

"Well yelling is not going to make this situation any better"! I snapped back. I had to tell everyone what had happened, because they wouldn't let me leave without telling them. Reece and Ryker went full-blown murderous and being angry was a complete understatement. Leah was too, but she was trying to hide it, because then the guys would get even more angrier, but she was worried and upset that it had happened.

Ryker and I are now driving to find Faith, and he's been cursing and yelling the whole time, and I was already sick of it.

"I can't believe this happened" He muttered under his breath followed by numerous curse words. "Ok Ryker! I get it you're mad! But what are you going to do about it?! It happened! It happened to me, and it's happened to a million of other girls!"

I know I was being extremely negative, and was making it seem like it was no big deal, but I know what the feeling is..I've been through it, and I don't want to have to think about it again. Ryker became silent as so did I.

Great...

Leah's pregnant..Faith was sexually harassed...Ryker's mad at me..

What's next!?

"Stop!" I blurted as I saw Faith on the side of road with the high-beams on her brightly. Ryker pulled over, and I opened the door then getting out and running up to Faith and pulling her into a hug right away, and she was crying and clung to me "Rain-".

"Shh, it's okay. You don't have to say anything" I said calmly, and I saw that her clothes were ripped. Ryker walked up with a cold hard stern face, and Faith pulled away from me and looked at Ryker with worry in her eyes. Ryker didn't say anything, he just pulled her into a tight hug like it was the last time he could ever see her.

* * * * * *

"Here" Liz said as she handed Faith a mug of tea, and Faith sat up straight as she criss-crossed her legs "Thank you.." Faith mumbled, and Liz nodded then taking a seat. Everyone was silent, and I cleared my throat "Um..".

Faith turned her head to look at me; since I was sitting right next to her. Everyone else looked at me, and I looked down at my lap since I was sitting side-ways, and blinked slowly a few times.

I gulped silently "I do know..how it f-feels" I stuttered, and I saw Ryker tense up as well as my brothers. She gave me a confused look, and I nodded "In sophomore year, I was at a party....It was fun; I was always a partier, I went with friends and got drunk and made out with boys that I didn't even know the name to.." I said as I smiled slightly at the thought, of how fun I use to think that was.

"Whoa...You're meaning to tell me? Rain Thompson was a player"? Will asked shocked, and I laughed "Yeah. I was".

I turned back to Faith "One night, I was on the verge of being drunk, and I was dating this guy.." I trailed off and shifted uncomfortably in my spot "He was Mr. Popular, a Bad Boy, and every girl wanted him. I was just the one who got him".

I paused for a second then taking a deep breath, and Joel stood up and sat down next to me, and rubbed my shoulder's to try and calm me down.

"Uh.." I trailed off and bit my lip "That night, I was with a group of my friends and we were at this party that the whole school was at. Mind you this guy was a senior, and the relationship was illegal but we didn't care. I thought I was in love..I thought I'd marry him..I thought I'd be with him forever..."

I blinked away a few tears just at the thoughts, and I saw Ryker's hand's clutching in fist as his jaw clenched tight as if it locked. "I was naive, young, and desperate at the time. I was in a very vulnerable stage from being drunk....He was sober as ever, and he took me away from everyone and upstairs".

I shut my eyes closed "The next thing I knew..one thing left to another, and I knew that it was wrong, but I couldn't get away. He held me back as I pleaded for him to let me go but he wouldn't...I was in panic, and was completely violated. He was very abusive in away, and I just remembering trying to scream for help but he covered my mouth with his hand, and made me feel mute. Like no matter hard I tried, no one could hear my screams".

I lifted up my shirt a bit and pushed my jeans down a bit to reveal a scar on my hip-bone "And his nails dug so much into my skin, it left a scar". I sighed and ran a hand through my hair "Luckily one of my friends at the time came looking for me, and I got out of there".

"You were-" Neil asked shocked and I cut him off and just nodded "Yeah..I was". I stood up, and looked at Faith "So if you need someone to talk to, I'm always there. I just wanted to tell you, so that you know you're not the only one".

She nodded and gulped. I hugged all my brothers, Leah, Liz, Vince, Will, Peter, Craig, Neil, and Faith. I came to Ryker and I leaned over since he was sitting, and pecked his lips and his face was emotionless.

I sighed "Night Guys" and walked upstairs to my room, and turned on the light and I sighed in relief at how I've missed my room. I slip my Converses and Jeans off then pulling my shirt up which left me in a bra and underwear. I plugged my phone into my charger, and closed my curtains of my window wall and saw it was 3 a.m.

I was throwing all my throw-pillows on the ground, and starting to pull down my covers. I heard my bedroom door open, and I didn't even need to turn around to know it was Ryker. A few seconds later a pair of arms wrapped around my waist from behind, and he rested his chin on my shoulder, and he nuzzled his head into the crook of my neck and kissed my neck as he let his lips linger in there for a few seconds.

"I'm sorry...for freaking out on you earlier, there's nothing you could have done and I was blaming everything on you...I'm sorry, Rain" Ryker apologized, and I sighed then turning around his arms to face him.

"You're just lucky that your an awesome boyfriend, or I'd never talk to you again" I smiled, and he smirked "Oh really"? as his face got closer to mine. I wrapped my arms around his neck and my smile turned into a grin.

He pressed his lips softly to mine, and I smiled against his lips, as his hand pressed to the small of my back and right above my butt, and he pulled on my lip.

We both pulled away, and Ryker kissed my forehead "You need to get to bed, you have school tomorrow".

I frowned and he nodded towards my bed "Come on, I'll lay with you". I sighed and plopped down on my bed, and Ryker climbed in next to me after slipping his shoes off. I laid my head on his chest and he put an arm around me as he was up against my headboard, and he pulled the covers over the both of us.

"Goodnight, princess" Ryker whispered, and I smiled to myself.

"Goodnight, Ryk" I whispered back and he hit my light switch and turned off the lights.

# Chapter 7

I woke up to an annoying beeping sound, and Ryker reached over and shut off his alarm on his phone.

He rubbed his eyes and shifted in his spot "Come on" He yawned "Get up, you have school".

I buried my face into his chest, and mumbled "I'll just skip today". Ryker rolled his eyes at me "No. You've already missed way to much".

"I hate High School" I muttered and he chuckled, then kissing my forehead "You'll be out in a month".

I sighed, and my door opened "Rain, you-" Ryan's voice then stopped and he froze.

I rolled my eyes and turned on my side to face him. "You two slept in the same bed"?! He exclaimed with wide eyes.

"Yeah...we have a million times.." I trailed off, and Ryan yelled "Rain! You're 18 and not married"!

I rolled my eyes again, and Ryker draped his arm over my waist "Calm. We haven't done anything".

Ryan sent him a glare "Watch what you do with my little sister, and if you break her; I'll break you".

"Fine" Ryker shrugged, and I pointed to the door "Ryan. Out. Now".

He glared at Ryker one more time, then walking out. I stood up and ran a hand through my hair and headed to the bathroom to get ready.

* * * * * * *

"You're going to be late" Ryker whispered breathlessly, and I whispered back "I don't care".

I pressed my lips back to Ryker's, and placed my hands flat on his chest. We may or may not have been in a make out session for the past 5 minutes on the side of Ryker's truck, from when he came to drop me off.

"Rain". "You're". "Stalling". Ryker said between kissing, and he unwrapped his arms from my waist, then grabbing my wrist in his hands and pulled back.

I frowned, and he tucked a piece of hair behind my ear "I'll see you later, okay? You have to get to class.."

I sent him a glare in response. He was right though, I was trying to stall and avoid going to class.

He kissed my forehead and chuckled at me being annoyed "Bye Rain", then starting to walk away.

"Ryk" I spoke up, and grabbed his hand. He turned around to face me and I bit my lip "One more kiss"?

His lips tugged up into a smirk as he walked back over to me, and pressed lips softly to mine and I smiled against his lips.

I heard the bell go off, and Ryker pulled back again and teased "Bye Rain".

I huffed then grabbing my backpack and slinging it over my shoulder and walking away.

* * * * * *

I was sitting in Mrs. Doyle's classroom and Blake kept staring at me throughout the whole class.

I looked back a bit and saw Blake's eyes still fixated on me and boring into my back. I turned back around to face the board as Mrs. Doyle was talking about something.

Then I flicked my pencil up and down on my notebook, and stared at the clock.

It was only 3rd period and I was already so done with school today. My phone buzzed, and I looked down to see it was Neil.

Neil: Be ready.

I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion, and whispered to myself "Be ready"?

Me: Huh?

Then the door opened, and I saw Vince and Ryker walk in. All the girls straightened up and went into flirting mode.

Vince pointed at me and snapped his fingers "You. Let's go".

Everyone looked at me, and Ryker whispered something to Mrs. Doyle. Her eyes then widened, and she nodded "Rain. Pack up your things, you're excused".

I quickly shut my books and picked them up, then walking up to the front of the class.

Ryker grabbed my hand and said "Thanks, Mrs. Doyle". She nodded, and they pulled me out of the classroom.

Then rushing down the hall "Go to your locker and put your stuff away" Vince said "I'm going to go sign you out" then jogging away.

"Ryk? What's going on"? I asked nervously, as I bit my lip.

"I'll explain later, but we have to go" He said and I unlocked my locker then putting all my things in there.

"You need your passport" Ryker said, and my eyes widened "What?! Why do I need my passport"?!

We pulled up to my house, and Ryker and Vince got put of the car then heading up to my house.

I blinked slowly a few times, then getting out and running up with them. I went up the spiral staircase, and ran to my room.

Vince and Ryker were searching through my bedroom, and I asked "Would someone just tell me what's going on"?!

"Found it"! Vince called, and pulled out a file full of all my contact information that had my passport in it.

Ryker sighed as he came up to me "Rhett framed us for a faulty drug deal from some of the top gangs I'm the U.S., and we have to go out of country or they'll block us and do-God-knows-what."

My eyes grew wide to the point where I thought they'd pop out of their sockets "What?! I can't leave! I have my brothers and-"

"Rain" Ryker stopped me and pulled me into a hug "We have to go, and we're not leaving you behind".

Tears pricked my eyes, and Ryker rested his chin on top of my head. Vince was grabbing a bunch of clothes and stuffing them into a bag for me, and I fought against the tears in my eyes.

"I'll be in the car" Vince said, then grabbing the bag he stuffed everything in and walking out of my room.

I pulled back, and Ryker wiped the tears that escaped my eyes. "Don't cry, princess. I hate seeing you cry".

I bit my lip, and he kissed my forehead "It'll be okay".

* * * * * * *

"Alright, you get Melanie and Faith" Ryker instructed as we came up to there schools to pull them out.

We had to be at the airport by 12:30 and it was already 11:34 and the airport is still 30 minutes away.

I sprinted down the halls that were filled with little kids being guided by their teachers, as they were constantly being "Hushed".

I ran to Melanie's classroom, and opened the door as all the kids looked at me.

"Um..May I please pull Melanie out? It's It's a family emergency" I said to the teacher who looked at me like I had 2 heads.

She turned to Melanie and asked "Melanie, do you know her"?

Melanie nodded and smiled at me "Hi Rain".

The teacher waved me over to her desk and asked "Name"?

"Rain Th-Anderson" I stated as I quickly remembered that they only let family take out kids.

She gave me a suspicious look "How are you related to her"?

I Don't have time for this lady!

"I'm...Ryker's wife..." I trailed off and hope she bought it. "Really? Because you're in a High School uniform..and looked affuly young".

"That's because I married young" I said trying not to snap at her and her annoying accusations.

She sighed "Alright Melanie, pack your things and you may go".

Melanie grabbed her folder and walked out of class, and turned around to me as she gave a confused look "Why are you here, Rain"?

"I'll explain later, Kiddo" I said and picked her up "But now we have to go get Faith".

I then began to run to the other building which was on the other side of the parking lot, and a bunch of High Schoolers looked at me weirdly.

I knew where Faith's class was because of that one time when we came to pick her up. I opened the door and walked in, as all heads once again snapped up to me.

Faith's eyes widened, as she looked up at me "Rain"?!

Her teacher looked at me weirdly and I shifted Melanie onto my hip "I'd like to pull out Faith".

Faith blinked slowly a few times then closing her textbooks, and putting them in her backpack as she put them away. "Name"? The teacher asked.

Not this process again....

"Rain Anderson" I lied, and Faith's lips tugged into a small smirk as she stood up and walked up to me. She had the hood of her black sweatshirt up and shielding her face from everyone.

"Relationship to child"? The teacher asked me and Faith perked in "She's my brothers wife"

I nudged her in the ribs with my elbow and rolled my eyes. She let out a small chuckle, and I sent her a small smile.

I've noticed that when something bad happens, Faith always puts on a smile and laughs, and ignores what has happened as she just moves on.

"Alright. You're dissmissed" Her teacher said.

"Vince! GO!" Ryker yelled, and Vince yelled back "Stop backseat driving"!

"I'm in the passenger seat, idiot" Ryker snapped at Vince. We had to board the plane in 20 minutes, and still had to go through security, and we're still driving to the airport.

Vince and Ryker have been fighting the whole way hear, and I was stuck between them as Melanie and Faith were in the back.

"I can't go any faster or will get pulled over"! Vince defended, and I rolled my eyes "Alright! Just let me drive"! I snapped over their bickering.

"Fine" Vince muttered "Ryker won't yell at you" then unbuckling and we did an awkward climb over as we switched seats.

I buckled my seatbelt, and said "First rule of driving in New York: Don't go on the highways".

I quickly did a 'U' turn and sped down the street, as I clutched the steering wheel in my hand, as I swerved in and out of cars.

"She drives better then you" Ryker muttered and smacked Vince upside the head.

I sent Ryker a warning look, and grabbed my phone and scrolled through my contacts.

I clicked on a number, and handed the phone to Vince, and he put it on speaker.

It rang a couple times before a voice picked up "Hey Rain, I haven't heard from you in awhile".

"Hey Kent" I said, and Ryker asked "Kent"?

Kent is a cop who always works the highway we were trying to get off right now, but there was traffic. He use to be my dad's partner, and actually was nice to me.

"Can I ask you for a favor"? I asked curiously as I bit my lip and kept my eyes on the road.

"Of course" He said cheerfully and I saw Ryker tensing up and becoming jealous.

"I'm on 33, and I need to be at the airport by 12:00. But we're stuck in traffic, can you escort"? I explained.

"I don't know Rain...That's illegal..." He trailed off.

"Please" I begged, and he gave "Oh Alright, where are you"?

I explained what car I was in and where I was on the highway, then hanging up.

"KENT"?! Ryker yelled with anger filling in his voice, as jealous took over him.

"Yes, Kent" I rolled my eyes. "Who is this dude?! Because last time I checked, you had a boyfriend..that is unless you want a new one"! Ryker yelled.

"Oh Hush" I waved him off as I rolled my eyes again; which I seemed to do a lot around Ryker. Vince watched with a smirk on his face as Faith and Melanie were trying not to laugh in the back.

"Don't roll your eyes at me, when you're flirting with some other guy"! Ryker exclaimed.

I looked at him and narrowed my eyes "You think that's flirting? Oh I'll shown you flirting."

I took my hands of the wheel since we were in traffic, and looked at Vince.

I bit my lip seductively, and took his hand as I laced my fingers through his "You know...you could smile, I'm here" then winking.

Vince's jaw dropped as he stared at me dumbstruck.

"Rain Eliza Thompson"! Ryker yelled, and Faith added "Correction: Rain Eliza Anderson".

Ryker tensed up, and I saw a cop car with flashing lights come to us. Then pulling ahead, and I stepped on the gas and sped out as I followed Kent.

We passed the cars, and I changed gears, as I kept right behind Kent.

We finally pulled up to the airport, and I parked then everyone got out, and I walked up to Kent's car as Ryker followed.

He put down the window and I smiled "Thanks for the escort, I owe you".

Ryker's eyes widened as he realized it was 48 year old man, and I sent him an I-told-You-So-Look. "No problems Rain, now I got to get back to the station. Stay safe".

He drove away, and I turned to Ryker "See. Now could you stop being such an jealous overprotective boyfriend"?

"No" He muttered then turning around to get Melanie and help Vince get everything out of the car.

"Melanie" Ryker groaned in annoyance, as she was crying and staring at the window as she begged to get off the plane and go home. Ryker has been trying to calm her down for the past hour, since she's been freaking out.

We were luckily in a separate part of the plane where there was only a few seats, and it was coach; which I've never rode in, but it was just us as everyone else was in 2nd or 1st class, so no one could complain about Melanie...I mean beside Ryker..

Reece stood up from his seat, and walked over to take Melanie from Ryker to quote 'take his shift', because that's what they were calling taking care of Melanie now. I was between Neil in Liz, and Neil was on his phone as Liz was flipping through some magazines.

Craig, Vince, Will, and Peter were all figuring out a plan on this whole chaos. I took out my phone and bit my lip as it's only been 2 hours, and we had 6 more to go. They all refused to tell me where we were going though, which made me anxious.

I sighed and stood up, then walking over to the other aisle and sitting down in the empty seat next to Ryker. "Hey" I said softly, and he muttered "Hey" as he scrolled through his phone.

"Wanna tell me where we're going"? I asked, and he rolled his eyes "No". I pouted and frowned at him, as he leaned into to kiss my lips, and right when he did I turned my head, making him kiss my cheek.

"I'm not kissing you, till you tell me where we're going" I stated, and he rolled his eyes "Fine. Suit yourself". "I will" I stated, then standing up and walking back to my seat, but Liz and I switched so that I was on the end.

"Rain!" Will called back, and I raised an eyebrow at him. "Do you speak Italian"? He asked, and I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion "Si. lo voglio".

They all gave me confused looks and Peter asked "What did you just say"? "Yes. I do" I translated "But why"?

My mom is Italian, as so is my dad but my mom always use to speak Italian around the house, so I just caught on to it.

They looked at Ryker, and he sent them a warning look with a glare. "No reason" Craig shrugged and they turned back to talking about the gang methods.

I looked over at Ryker and sent him a glare. Ryker stood up, and walked down the aisle, but stopped at me and put an index finger on my chest, and leaned over to me "You have something on your shirt-" He said, and I looked down at my shirt.

He pushed my chin up and pressed my lips into his, and he pulled on my bottom lip teasingly, before pulling back from me.

"I hate you" I muttered, and he smirked then pulling back and standing up straight.

He sent me wink before walking to the back.

* * * * * * *

"Italy"?! I exclaimed with my eyes widening and we walked out of the airport.

"We flew to Italy, and you didn't tell me"! I exclaimed and punched Ryker in the arm. "Ow"! He said and rubbed his arm "It was suppose to be a surprise".

"So much for a surprise..We're only hear because we got blamed for a faulty drug deal" Will said as he loaded the rental Lamborghini.

"Ryker"! Melanie dragged on as she ran up to him and put her hands up. Ryker sighed, and picked her up, as he went to go help the guys.

"I have to go find a bathroom. I'm gonna puke" Leah whispered to me and Liz, then handing Liz her things.

Leah walked off to the bathroom, and I asked Liz "Did she tell the guys yet"?

Liz shook her head "No..She hasn't". "Why not"? I asked, and Liz sighed "Rain...she doesn't know if she's keeping the baby or not".

My eyes widened, and I grabbed Liz's wrist to pull her away from everyone "What"?!

"Rain, she's 26 and Craig and her aren't even dating. It was a druken mistake, and she's not financially or mentally stable to raise a kid" Liz explained.

"That doesn't matter"! I exclaimed "No child is a mistake! She can't have an abortion!"

"Think about this; What if you got pregnant with Ryker's baby? You're only 18, you're still in school..you still have college and I are only dating Ryker. Would you keep the baby"? Liz tested.

I crossed my arms and nodded "Yeah...I would. It'd be hard, but I would keep the baby. Because a baby is a baby, and it has a life that you can't just kill"!

"Rain! Liz! Let's go"! Peter yelled, and Liz turned back to me. "Don't intervene with Leah, it's her decision. She already feels bad enough".

Liz walked away, and I stood there with my arms crossed, lips pressed together as my mind ran through thoughts.

* * * * * * * * *

"Rain!" Reece yelled as he ran into my room as I was looking through some maps so I wouldn't get lost later.

"You got to come see this" He said breathlessly, and I cocked an eyebrow as he just beckoned me over. I grabbed my leather jacket and slipped it on as I followed Reece out.

He jogged down the hall and I followed. We came to the lobby of the hotel that we Checked into. "Them" Reece said with his voice cold and hard as pointed at a group of built men.

They were all in leather jackets with the words "Fierce Fire". I knew the name, from when I my dad would watch documentaries on gangs incase he came across them.

Fierce Fire is a top gang and one of the most wanted. They're the biggest gang in Italy, and they're terrifying. I then saw they had something in their hand.

I squinted my eyes to see what it was. "Oh God" I said as my eyes went wide "Reece that's a fucking bomb"!

I then ran out and Reece yelled after me "Rain! Rain! Rain"! I pushed the door opened, and yelled "Hey! You!"

Their heads all snapped at me as smirks appeared on all their faces "Well hey bella" They said in their Italian accents.

Reece came out, and I glared at them "Drop the bomb".

One gave me a shocked look "You got a good eye, bella", as a smirk tugged at his lips "I'm guessing your one of those American Crusaders".

I heard Reece muttering things into his phone behind me, and I looked at the small bomb that was formed into a small stick that was the width of his hand.

"See, we don't like other gangs treading on our territory. And that's exactly what you're doing" The man which I'm guessing is the leader said.

The guy smirked then dropping it and counting down "5...4....3...." as he pulled out a remote control with a red button in the center.

I did the only thing and I tackled him to the ground for the remote. I was then grabbed by a bunch of other guys and Reece immediately jumped in.

I got out of the one guys grip by elbowing him in the gut, and a guy that came up to me took a punch to a jaw from me.

The next one that came up threw a punch but I quickly ducked and kicked him in the gut to send him flying back. I quickly picked up the small bomb and Reece was being held back by some guy "Rain! Throw it"!

I took my arm back and threw up into the air and made it Go as far away as possible so that they couldn't get to it. "Oh that was a bad idea" The man said to me.

A bunch of guys that were holding onto Reece let go of him. The man came up to me and gave me a cold glare "I'd leave before you do anything else stupid like that again".

They walked away, and Reece and I looked at each other as both our breathing was heavy.

"Don't tell the gang about this"? He questioned, and I nodded in agreement "Don't tell them".

# Chapter 8

<^> Ryker Anderson <^>

It's already been 1 day in Italy, and Rain already seemed to get sick with a stomach ache, fever, and headache and Liz said she woke up all through the night and didn't sleep.

I honestly think she made herself sick from stressing herself out so much, which she does a lot.

I walked down the hallway of the hotel, and to Rain and Liz's room, where they were sharing. I raised my fist and knocked on the door that had been locked.

"Rain, babe. It's me" I said "Let me in". A few moments later Liz opened the door "Well it's about time you got here, your girlfriend had been throwing up for the past 2 hours".

"I was trying find an English doctor" I pointed out as I rolled my eyes at her, "Where is she"?

"In the bathroom" Liz nodded her head towards the closed door "She's brushing her teeth I think".

The door then flung open and Rain out looking like a mess but still managed to look cute at the same time.

Her hair was thrown up into a messy bun, she was in joggers and a t-shirt; that I believed was mine..."Hi" She mumbled, and I walked over to her and kissed her forehead "Hey princess".

And I could feel her head burning up, and she gave a tired look and Liz hovered over her like a mother to go back in bed.

She huffed and walked back to the King Size bed and climbed in. Liz asked "What times the doctor appointment again"?

"12" I answered and Rain laid on her side, facing me. I placed the back of my hand on her forehead "Ah, Rain you're burning up. Have you taken any medicine"?

Liz sighed and narrowed her eyes at Rain. "Fine" Rain muttered and pointed to her suitcase that was laying on the ground "Ryk can you grab the Ibuprofen out of my bag? It's on the side".

I went over to her suitcase and grabbed the bottle of Ibuprofen and handed it to her.

She took 3 out, and swallowed them whole. "I'm going to go grab something to eat in the cafeteria, want anything Rain"? Liz asked.

Rain shook her head "No", and Liz pointed at me "Keep an eye on her", then grabbing her jacket and walking out of the hotel room.

I climbed into bed next to her, and she immediately moved closer to me as she cuddled into my chest. I wrapped my arms around her as I kissed the top of her head "I'm sorry you got sick".

She coughed into her clutched fist and I rubbed circles on her back. "Oh God, Rain" I said feeling bad for her and pulling her into a tight hug.

She tangled her legs with mine, and laid her head on my chest, and I half smiled/smirk at how she wanted to be close to me.

The door opened, and Leah walked in "Hey" She greeted with a small smile.

Rain sat up, and I felt her tense up, which I didn't know why. "How you feeling"? Leah asked her.

"Like hell" Rain mumbled and plopped back on the bed and my chest.

Leah sighed "Well sorry you got sick. Blame Neil".

Rain let put a small laugh under her breath, and rolled her eyes. Leah turned to me and stood up straight "Where's Liz"?

"RAIN"! Liz's voice yelled as she ran through the door, making Rain flinch at the loudness because of her headache as she took her hair out of the bun it was in.

"Liz! Shhh"! I scowled at her, and her mouth formed an 'O' shape.

"Found her" I said to Leah, and Leah rolled her eyes. Liz said to Rain "You're pregnant".

I choked on air in my throat and broke out to a coughing fit. As Rain gave her an Are-You-Serious look as she narrowed her eyes.

"You better not be. Because I didn't do anything" I defended and Rain rolled her eyes "I'm not pregnant. I haven't had sex in 2 years..."

Liz frowned "But your kids would be blessed". Leah smacked her arm and grabbed Liz's hand "Let's leave them alone, Liz".

Leah dragged Liz out of the room, and shut the door behind them. "I question Liz's thinking process sometimes" Rain mumbled.

"Sometimes?" I scoffed "More like all the time".

She chuckled, and I turned to face her and pressed my lips to her, and she kissed back right away.

Then she pulled back right away "Ryk..No, you'll get sick".

"I don't care" I muttered and pressed my lips back to hers, and pulled on her bottom lip.

"Well I do" She said as she pulled back from me "You don't need to get sick, because I already screwed up the plains".

"Rain" I stopped her "Don't say that. It's not your fault you got sick, it's just an extra day to figure things out".

She sighed, and I went to kiss her but she put a hand up between us "I'm still sick, and I feel and look gross".

I rolled my eyes at her, and she bit her lip, as her eyes caught mine. I always loved her eyes..they were such a suddel piercing gentle blue, that you could stare at for ours.

They matched her too...they were just as unique and beautiful as she was herself.

Rain quickly got up and ran to the bathroom, as she covered her mouth with her hand.

"Rain" I said and walked towards the bathroom "Rain, you okay"?

She was sitting on the cold tiled ground, and hunched over the toilet seat. I sighed and pulled her hair back out of her face "God Rain..I'm sorry" I said as if it was my fault.

She took a towel and wiped her mouth and shrugged "It's fine" She mumbled.

* * * * * * * *

"Craig, just shut the hell up" I snapped "I'm not dealing with this shit right now" as I picked up Melanie and set her on the chair and kneeling down. I helped her get her shoes on then tying them.

"No Ryker! You shut up!" He yelled then gritting "Because this is dangerous ground were on, and I don't want it being screwed up. Especially with Rain".

I rolled my eyes and stood back up "Let go of the fucking grudge you have against her. And Just because you can't get a girlfriend doesn't mean you have to hate mine" I gritted through my teeth.

Craig shook his head in disgrace as he looked down "You know, you'd think you'd have more respect for me, considering I raised you".

Craig look back up at me "Because when your parents left you, I was there! I'm the one that took care of you"!

"And everyone wonders why I turned out the way I did"! I yelled out of anger. Craig became silent and he clenched his jaw.

"I slept with Leah" He muttered, and Rain came down dressed in a white t-shirt, jeans, and a black leather jacket.

I immediately grabbed him by the shirt and gritted "You what"?!

"I slept with her a month ago, when we came back from the bar and she was drunk" Craig stated stern.

My muscles became tense, I slammed Craig up against the wall and through a punch at his gut. "Ryker"! Rain yelled and grabbed my arm.

I kept a glare at Craig and I wanted nothing more then to pummel him to a bloody pulp. "You fucking slept with my sister"?! I yelled.

Craig didn't do anything. He kept and emotionless face. "You fucking whore, go burn in hell"! I yelled.

I ripped my arm out of Rain's grip and sent a punch flying to his jaw, and Craig stumbled back and fell. "Ryker!" Rain yelled, and stood in front of me and Craig was behind her. "Go" She ordered.

"Go"? I questioned. "Go!" She yelled "Go, because you can't be beating up people! Craig's basically your family! Now Go, I don't want to see you"!

"Rain, he slept with my sister-" I started to deafened. "I don't care! Now go"! She shouted "And don't come back until you get your head on straight and stop being a fucking asshole"!

"You know, what? Fine" I muttered and walked out and slammed the door behind me.

* * * * * * * * * *

<^> Rain Thompson <^>

I sighed, as Ryker slammed the door one his way out. I knelt down to Craig, and he was clutching his gut, and hunched over with his back against the door.

I called Vince, and explained everything to him. Craig's lip was busted, a black eye would be sure to form, and his jaw was unset.

The door opened and the rest of the gang came. "Well that was quick.." I trailed off, Vince and Neil nodded as they came up to Craig.

"Great..Just great" Neil muttered. Vince asked "Where is Ryker"? "I don't know, I told him to leave, and he's somewhere on the streets now".

I stood up, and clutched my head in pain as there was a pang in it. "Rain, go lie down. You're still sick" Liz said.

Leah was staring at Craig with worry as she bit her lip, picked at her fingernails nervously and seemed to be daydreaming..in a not so good way.

I followed Liz's order and walked out of the room and down to my hotel room. I picked up my phone off my nightstand once I came to my room, and saw I had no messages.

Great....Just Great..

My boyfriend is somewhere in Italy, Our Gang Leader was beaten up, One of our gang members aka my boyfriend's sister is pregnant. And Oh yeah...we're only up against the biggest gangs in the nation.

I plopped back onto my bed, and rubbed my temples as I stared up at the ceiling.

* * * * * *

I was sitting in the lounge, as I bit my fingernails and sat in a chair. The guys should be back any minute, with Ryker.

They texted me and said he was at some bar; but wasn't drunk or with girls. He was just sitting at the counter of the bar alone.

The door opened, and I shot up as I saw Reece, Peter, and Will walk in followed by Ryker. I felt bad that I told him to leave, but he didn't handle the whole Craig and Leah thing the way he should have.

Craig was in his room on bed rest for now, and I went to the doctors appointment an a hour ago; and they gave me antibiotics.

I fidgeted with my fingers, and walked up slowly to him, and my mind started to go about confronting him, but I couldn't.

I felt guilty for the things that I said, and even the way I handled it. Ryker's eyes were dark, yet tired and weary. "I-I'm s-sorry" I stuttered, and his eyes met mine.

Ryker had a glare holding in his blue eyes that I loved. Ryker clenched his jaw "Well it doesn't sound like you mean it", then walking past me with his shoulder brushing against mine, then heading towards the elevator.

"Ryker" I called out in a sigh, but Ryker ignored me and walked into the elevator

"You coming"? Liz asked as she came out of the bathroom and snapped her earrings in. "Nah" I shook my head as I hugged a pillow to my chest "I'm staying back tonight".

She placed her hands on her hips "Oh come on, it'll be fun. Plus it's our last day before we get evolved into all the gang stuff". I sighed and picked at the edges of the pillow case.

"You and Ryker still not talking to each other"? She asked, and I shook my head in response as I pressed my lips in a thin line.

It's been 5 hours since Ryker came back, and he hasn't talked to me. Apparently him and Craig got into another fight. So the guys decided it'd be good to get out, and get something for dinner at some pizza restaurant.

Liz sighed "Well Vince is forcing him to go, so you're coming too. And it's normal for couples to fight; it's a fact of life". I shrugged, and Liz walked up then grabbing my hand and pulling me up off the queen sized bed "Come on. It'll be fun".

"Fine" I mumbled and grabbed my keys off the dresser "Let me go grab my jacket", then walking out into the hallway to go to Peter and Ryker's room where I left my jacket from earlier. I passed Peter in the hall and stopped him "Hey, can you grab my jacket? I left it your room".

"Ryker's in there, and the door's unlocked" Peter stated, and I bit my lip "Can't you just get it"? Peter rolled his eyes "Really Thompson? He's your boyfriend for God sakes! Just because you two aren't talking to each other, doesn't mean you don't have to breath the same air. Now go into the room and grow a pair".

I rested my hands on my hips and narrowed my eyes at him "Then why don't you grow a pair and ask out Liz"? His eyes widened, and I nodded "Yeah, I know about that whole chaos between you two". "Get your jacket" He snapped and rolled his eyes then walking away.

"Can't take the heat, Smith"?! I called after him earning the middle finger from Peter. I let out a small laugh, and walked to the Ryker's and Peter's room. I knocked, but there was no answer.

I knocked again. No answer. I sighed, then reaching for the door handle and pushing it down to open the door. I walked in, and the room was dark and quiet. A sound of a door closing shut approached, and I saw Ryker walk out of the bathroom with his hair damp.

He was shirtless with a pair of joggers and he was drying his hair with a towel quickly. He threw the towel on the bed, and his head snapped to meet me. I pressed my lips in a thin line "I..I forgot my jacket".

He nodded and clenched his jaw, then his phone began to vibrate on the nightstand. I walked to the other side of the room and searched for my jacket, and Ryker answered the phone, putting it up to his ear.

"What"? He asked, and there was a few moments of silence. I just continued to search for my jacket so it wouldn't be obvious that I was ease-dropping on his conversation. He let out a small laugh of air, and I glanced at him to see a small smile tug at his lips.

"Yeah, got it. See you there" He said, then hanging up. I tensed up and felt a feeling of jealous come over me, and wanted to ask him who he was talking to.

What if it was a girl?

My mind began to race with thoughts, and I wanted to take his phone and call whoever that was back to find out who it was. "Ryker"! A voice yelled, and Melanie ran in "Can I have a hat"? Ryker took one of his black snap-back that was set on the dresser, and placed it on Melanie's head. She giggled as she secured the hat that was to big for her on her head.

I went back to looking for my jacket, and I felt a tug at my hand. I looked down to see Melanie and she beckoned me down to her with her hand. I knelt down to her height "Yes"? She placed another one of Ryker's black snap-back's on my head and giggled "Now we can match".

I looked up to Ryker, who was staring at me as he was watching Melanie with me. "Right, Ryker"? Melanie asked, and Ryker tore his stare away from mine and nodded "Yeah, right" He muttered, not saying anything else; to go along with Melanie.

Ryker then grabbed my jacket from the closet, and tossed it to me. I caught it, and blinked slowly a couple times "Thank you" I mumbled and started to walk out. "Rain"! Melanie yelled after me, and I stopped, turning around to look at her "Can I ride with you"?

"Oh, I'm going with Craig and Vince. I'll see you at the restaurant though" I offered a small smile to her. Ryker's face went cold at the sound of Craig's name, and I tensed up then Melanie ran up to me. She hugged me tightly, and I sighed, because I could tell she knew Ryker and I were fighting. She was young, but she was smart for her age.

"Please make up with Ryker" She whispered into my ear as she hugged me tightly "Because I don't like any of his other girlfriends". I chuckled a bit and pulled back to look at her. I placed my forehead to hers and nodded "We will", and she pecked my lips with a small kiss. I smiled and stood up "Bye Kiddo", then heading out the door.

* * * * * * * * * *

I got out of the black matte black Ferrari, and slammed the door shut. Craig got out of the backseat, and Vince got out of the driver's side as I got out of the passenger seat. I ran a hand through my hair, and Vince came beside me, slinging an arm over my shoulders, coming up to the some-what fancy bar restaurant.

I was in black skinny jeans, a white t-shirt that had a v-neck cut, black high-top Converses, and the snap-back the Melanie wanted me to wear that was Ryker's. All the guys were in white t-shirts, leather jackets, and jeans as so were Leah and Liz.

"Reservation for.." Vince trailed off as we went up to the front podium, where a waitress was standing. Vince looked at Craig and asked "What's is under"? "Reece called, so I think Anderson" Craig stated, and Vince turned back to the girl "Anderson". She nodded then leading us back through the restaurant.

Liz smiled "Hey", and I sat down next to her. "Hey" I offered a small smile. The guys took their seats, and Vince asked "Where's Reece and Ryker"? "On their way" Faith answered "They got caught up in something". I tensed up and my phone vibrated, and I saw a text from my dad.

I gulped as my eyes flickered, and it said 'Call Me.' "I'll be right back" I said, then standing up and walking out of the restaurant. I called my dad, and put up to my ear nervously. I bit my lip as my heartbeat began to race.

He answered on the 3rd ring, and I bit my lip "Hey dad".

"Don't 'Hey Dad' me, Rain. But you will get your ass on the first flight home back to New York City. I already hate that boyfriend of yours, and to run off to Italy with him is absurd" He gritted "You're lucky I didn't just fly their myself, and smack the shit out of you."

"Dad listen-" I started, but he cut me off "No. Don't fucking talk. I want you to get on a plane right now, or I'm calling the Police Department in Italy and they'll get you on a plane, and when you get home you're in so much shit".

I gulped silent as I swallowed a lump that built up in my throat. "If you ever pull this again, I will fucking shoot you in the head".

That hurt..

That comment made a pang in my chest, and tears pricked my eyes. I hung the phone up on him, and I heard a car door shut. I looked up to see Reece, Ryker, Leah; who was carrying Faith walk up, and Reece jogged up to me concerned "Hey, have you been crying"?

I wiped the tears away and shook my head "No, someone was just chopping onions". Ryker's face was taken over by concern, and I could see that he was worried about me. "Let's just go inside" I said wiping my hands on my jeans, and turning around to walk inside.

"Rain" Ryker's voice spoke, making me stop "What did your dad say"?

I closed my eyes as my back was still facing towards him, and my heart sunk. It was scary, how well he knew me. He always seems to know whats going on with me and why I'm upset. "Nothing" I breathed then walking inside the restaurant.

# Chapter 9

We were sitting at the restaurant, and I rested my head on my palm as everyone was talking except Ryker and I.

I stirred my Soda with my straw and zoned off in my head. Ryker and I haven't spoken a word to each other, and the only thing he said was the question about the call my dad made to me.

"Right Rain"? Faith asked, making me snap out of reality. I blinked "Uh...yeah" I answered not knowing the question she asked.

Liz must have noticed I was off, and she put a hand to my back and asked in a whisper "Hey, what's wrong"?

I looked at her, and I held back the tears that were trying to escape me eyes "Everything" I said weakly.

She pursed her lips, and pulled me into a hug "It'll be okay, Rain". "That's what everyone says" I mumbled and pulled back then wiping the tears from me eyes again.

* * * * * * *

We walked out of the restaurant after an hour and a half. Faith, Will, and Peter all convinced everyone to go down to the beach.

I sat in the middle seat of some fancy sports car, and Neil got in next to me, Leah was in the passenger seat, Reece was driving.

Ryker then got in and sat down next to me. I tensed up, and shifted in my seat, leaning more towards Vince.

Reece sped off, and I bit my lip nervously as I sat between Neil and Ryker.

"No! It's not! Leah look at the fucking map"! Reece exclaimed, and I threw my head back in frustration.

Reece got us lost, and now Leah and Reece are arguing about the map. "Reece" I said angrily out of frustration "Let me drive".

"No! I know how to drive" He exclaimed then giving an accusing look to Leah "And if someone stopped arguing with me, I could"!

I rolled my eyes and when Leah and Reece went back to arguing, I walked over to the driver's side and climbed in through the window; one by one with my leg. "Get it" I snapped my fingers at Leah and Reece.

They sent each other a glare, then Leah got in the back and Reece got in the passenger seat. I turned the key, and started the engine up again.

I looked behind me to see if there was any cars and there wasn't. I stepped on the gas, and sped off.

I rested my head on my palm as my elbow rested on the window ledge. I kept one hand on the wheel and sped through the streets of Italy.

My eyes flickered up to the rear-view mirror to meet Ryker's. My eyes seemed to zoom in on his, and I couldn't look away.

Ryker looked away, making me turn my attention back to the road, so we wouldn't crash.

* * * * *

"RYKER"! A voice cheered, and I looked to see a girl with shoulder length dirty blond wavy hair. She had a skinny model fit tanned body.

She was in a blue bralette, and denim shorts. Ryker turned around and the girl ran up and hugged him. Ryker picked her up off the ground a bit and hugged her tightly.

"Oh my Gosh"! She said breathlessly, and I blinked slowly. Will and Reece came by each of my sides "Jealous"?

"No" I grumbled lying. They rolled their eyes at me, and Ryker put her down. I saw a group of people come up and Reece pulled me up.

"Guys"! Vince called and the group came up. "I want you to meet someone" then putting his hands on my shoulders "This is Rain, a new recruit"

"Rain this is Alessandra Cecilia Elisa Juliet Celeste Luca Valentino Aaron Abe Andre Augustus Dawson Felix Levi Memphis Tate Seb" Vince introduced and they all smiled at me or waved.

"This is the rest of the gang" Craig stated "They just live here in Italy". My mouth formed in an 'O' shape, and they all started to talk to me.

"Hey" A voice said, and I looked up and squinted me eyes because of the sun. I saw the girl that hugged Ryker earlier, and her name is Alessandra.

"Hi" I said faking a smile, just to seem polite. She sat down on the sand next to me, and out a hand out "I didn't get to introduce myself properly, I'm Alessandra Coasta".

"Rain Thompson" I said shaking her hand hestiantly. "Wait..mare you that model"? She asked in her Italian accent.

I nodded slightly and Ryker's voice called "Sandra"! and he came jogging up. Alessandra looked up at him and smiled.

"You've met my girlfriend"? Ryker asked her, and glanced at me. "Who"? She asked, and Ryker narrowed his eyes at her "You're sitting right next to her".

He said "girlfriend" and I internally sighed in relief.

Alessandra head snapped back to mine and her eyes widened "OhMyGosh! I didn't know you were Ryker's girlfriend, or I would have bought you flowers are something".

I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion, and Alessandra explained "Well I mean you're dating him, and he's a pain in the ass".

I let out a small laugh of air and turned my head to watch the ocean and the sun setting behind it.

But truthfully was just not trying to kill this boyfriend stealer whore, next to me.

"Rain, can I talk to you"? Ryker asked, clenching my jaw. "I don't know" I said "Can you"?

He rolled his eyes, and I sighed then standing up from the sand and wiping all of it off me.

Liz and Leah sent me a look and smiled at Ryker taking my hand and pulling me away from everyone.

We walked in silence for about 5 minutes and the beach was empty, and only sound was the waves crashing.

Ryker stopped walking and looked at me "Why are you jealous"? I stood up straight and crossed my arms loosely "I'm not".

"Rain" He narrowed his eyes at me "Don't lie to me. I know you, better then that. And I can see that you're jealous of Alessandra".

"I'm not"! I exclaimed in frustration and uncrossed my arms "I don't understand why you-"

I was then cut off when Ryker's lips smashed into mine. I responded right away and he picked me up, making me wrap my legs around his waist.

His tongue slid across my teeth; asking for entry, then soon finding mine. The kiss was hungry and passionate yet still was gentle.

I pulled away breathlessly, and he put down, so I could stand again. I slid my hands onto his chest and he kept his wrapped around my waist.

"Still jealous"? He asked, and I bit my lip but a smile tugged at my lips. "Rain" He said, taking my hands in his "You shouldn't get jealous, because no other girls is like you. And I like YOU. Because Prince Charming wishes he could be me".

I smiled and my cheeks turned red from blushing. "No more fighting"? I asked.

"No more fighting" Ryker stated, and I pressed my lips back to his.

* * * * * * * *

After spending 5 hours with the 'rest' of the gang here from Italy I learned what roles they play.

Cecilia and Andre are the brains, Augustus, Aaron, and Valentino are the fighters. Juliet and Alessandra are the looks. Levi, Memphis, and Felix are the funny ones. Celeste and Elisa are the organizers. Luca and Tate are engineers. Seb is the leader, with Dawson as his co-leader.

"Liz, this song is so 2015" Everyone groaned, and Liz waved us all off. I chuckled and was making coffee at midnight at the counter.

A pair if arms wrapped around my waist from behind and I grinned to myself, as Ryker buried his head in the crook of my neck.

He started to kiss my neck, and I was sure to have a hickey tomorrow. "Ryker" I scowled in a whisper "Not in front of everyone".

He pulled away and turned me around to face him, then taking my coffee and putting it aside.

He pressed my lips into mine, and I could tell he wanted more. His arms snaked around my waist, and lifted me up, setting me on the counter. I pulled away and Ryker frowned at me.

"Smashing Possessions"? Elisa and Cecilia asked curiously. "Huh"? Reece asked.

"It means "Are you having sex"? Memphis translated. I broke out into a coughing fit, and Ryker rolled his eyes at me.

"Wait! You two aren't"?! Neil and Reece exclaimed shocked "We though you were"!

"OH! PAY UP!" Peter, Will, and Vince all shouted at them as they shot up out of their seats.

"Seriously?! You guys bet when they'd sleep together"? Faith and Liz exclaimed, and Will pointed at them "Hey, money is money".

I rolled my eyes and Luca asked "So, Rain. How old are you"? "18" I answered, and they began to ask me questions.

* * * * * *

"Rise and Shine"! Voices yelled and the curtains were opened. I groaned and pulled the covers over my face as Liz buried her head into the pillow.

"Come on you two, get up" Craig ordered "We have things to do"! I flipped him off "Those things can wait".

"Thompson, get up"! He and Peter yelled, but I ignored them. Liz rolled out of the bed, but I refused to move out of bed considering it was only 10 a.m., and I was up till 5 a.m.

The door opened and Vince, Ryker, and Leah came in. "Get your girlfriend up, would you?" Peter said to Ryker, and I would have rolled my eyes if I could open them.

I then felt water dump onto me, and I shot up, and saw Ryker with a now empty water-bottle. "Fuck you"! I yelled and slapped him.

"Ow" He said lazily and rubbed his cheek. His eyes were droopy, hair was a mess, and bags were formed under his eyes as he sported the 'I want to kill everyone and go back to bed' look across his face.

The guys were all shirtless, and Ryker rolled his eyes at me "Well Good Morning Sunshine". "I hate you" I muttered as I walked over to the bathroom door.

"I know, sweetheart"! He called after me and I shut the bathroom door then locking it closed.

* * * * * * * *

"Hand me the wrench" I said and Vince handed me the wrench. I leaned over the hood of the car and messed with the head gasket that was stuck. Ryker slid out from underneath the 2016 Audi S3 sports car, with his back on a skateboard since he was working on the bottom of the car. "Rain, let me see that" He said, and I handed him the wrench. He slid back under, and started to fix something.

"Well isn't it the power couple" Celeste smiled as all the girls came up, and Juliet chuckled "Plus Vince". Vince bowed "Single as Ever" he smirked. I snorted and shook my head at him, and the girls chuckled.

"We came up with the map" Alessandra stated "But we have to find a route of the highways because if we take Padova it will lead us into gang city, but if we take Ravenna will be heading towards Rome and will be screwed". I took a look at the map, and scanned over it. Craig and Seb came over "How's it comin'?"

"Can't find a route to pass Rome without any gangs surrounding it" Alessandra informed as I kept my eyes fixated on the map. "What about we take Roma? Then we'd cut through Tivoli."

Ryker stood up and wrapped his arms around my waist from behind, as their was oil smuges on his face. "Loaded with cops" Augustus added as he came over.

"Not if we take backroads, and track the police out and go 90 we should be out in about 2 hours" I stated.

"We can't. It's to much of a risk, if the police catch us and see we're smuggling weapons over, will be sitting in jail till death" Craig said.

I looked up from the map at him "Then we're going to go through a bunch of gang territory..? I don't know about you Craig, but I'd like to actually live. So are you gonna hike up your skirt and take the route or get beatin' in the head with a baseball bat 25 times?"

"God, you're hot" Ryker whispered into my ear then kissing my neck. Craig gave an uncertain look to me then looking at the map.

His eyes flickered to me and they were dark to the point where they were black. "If we get caught, it's on you Thompson".

* * * * * * *

"Load em' up" Dawson ordered and Leah hugged me "Stay safe, okay?" I nodded and pulled away.

"Rain, you're riding with Val!" Levi called, and I sent Leah a small smile then jogging up to the Skyline. I got into the backseat, and in the middle between Tate and Alessandra.

Val was driving and Ryker was in the passenger seat. Val messed with the controls and fixed all his mirrors, and clasped hid hands around the steering wheel.

Everyone took off one by one, and I put my head back against the seat then taking a deep breath.

This is about to get bad…

# Chapter 10

"Babe, Babe" A voice repeated and I opened my eyes making them flutter because of the light.

I yawned and asked "What time is it?" "6 o'clock" Ryker answered, tucking a piece of hair behind my e ar "Come on, we're gonna stop a grab something to eat."

I nodded, then unbuckling the seat belt and getting out of the car. I looked around the pretty empty parking lot that had countable cars parked in it. I looked over to the restaurant and saw it was a beaten up old diner that had a flashing sign in Italian letters that said "Open", and it was making a weird buzzing sound.

"Where are we?" I asked tiredly as I rubbed my eyes to wake myself up."West side" Ryker answered "We had to avoid cops on the turnpike."

I nodded and we walked into the restaurant, where it was cold and had a broken shattered window, with old worn out wooden tables and with ripped leather chairs.

The only noise was the flat screen hanging from the wall. Dawson and Felix then went up to start talking to the guy who reminded me of Bob Marley in a way, and looked High as ever.

"Uh Ryk..I'll be right back. I have to call someone." I said hestiantly, then starting to walk away when his hand grabbed mine and he whirled me around to him..

"Yeah? And you want to explain why I just talk to your dad and he said that he told you to get back home or he'd shoot you" Ryker gritted and his eyes were dark and bored into me.

"H-How did you-" I started and he cut me off "He called you and sent you texts while you were asleep."

"You went through my phone?!" I whispered yelled trying not to cause a scene and attention towards us. "That doesn't matter. I'm more concerned about your dad! He's abusive Rain, why don't you go to the police?!"

"Because he is the police!" I exclaimed "And you still had not right to go through my phone!" He rolled his eyes at me "Because you've never went through mine."

"No, I haven't-" I started but Ryker cut me off "Don't even try to lie to me, Rain. I know you have, like when Chloe was around you went through my phone one night when you thought I was asleep."

My eyes widened and flickered down to the ground as I pursed my lips and guilt came over me. "Rain" Ryker sighed as he titled my chin up with his index finger to make me look at him "I don't want you to get to hurt."

"I'm not going to-" I started but he cut me off "No. Rain, you don't understand. I have no idea what I would do if something happened to you."

"Nothing is going to happen" I reassured as I grabbed hold of his hands in mine and laced our fingers together "I'm 18, Ryk. Not 8, I'm not some innocent teenager that caught up in gangs, and I think sometimes you forget that."

"Rain" He sighed as he looked away for a sec then back at me "You are young. You're the youngest here, and haven't had as much experience as all of us, and when other gangs find that out; they target that person."

"So this is about my age?" I asked annoyed as I tore my hands away from his and crossed my arms "Because you're only 2 two years older then me, and I'm a legal adult-"

"No" Ryker cut me off "It's not about your age. I just want you to stay safe. Because it's a game for other gangs; but with an undefeated record. Hurting someone is is a reward, Killing someone is a win. And if they loose...well hell breaks loose."

I stared at Ryker and swallowed a lump in my throat as I blinked slowly. I then stood up straight and pecked his lips before he pulled me into a actual kiss, and put a hand to my lower back as he pushed me closer to him.

* * * * * * *

"Val, you should just let me drive" I said, an he scoffed "Heck no! This car is my child and is worth more then anything you own."

I cocked an eyebrow at him, and Ryker laughed "Dude, her mom is a fashion designer, her dad was lawyer and is now the sheriff, and she's a model..she could buy you."

Val's eyes widened "What?!" "Wait, what's your mom's brand?" Alessandra asked curiously.

"Crosslines" I answered. Crosslines is my mom's clothing line and it's called that because when her and my dad divorced they "crossed lines" is what she always said.

"Oh my Gosh!" Alessandra gasped "I love that line! The designs are amazing." I smiled slightly and nodded "Yeah, when I was little I use to sit and watch her sketch an outfit then make it while sewing."

"You Miss her?" Tate bluntly asked and Ryker sent him a look "A bit blunt Tate, don't you think?"

"It's fine" I said to Ryker and turned back to Tate "Yeah, I do." "Why does your dad have custody if he..well you know?" Val asked as he kept his eyes in the road.

"Because the judge ruled favoring over to my dad because he was a lawyer at the time, and at that point of time my mom was very emotionally unstable with everything that was going on. So they granted full time custody to my dad, and my mom fought for it but never won. After

antlways arguing with my dad she moved to California to focus on her career. I haven't seen her since I was 13" I explained.

"Oh my God" Alessandra whispered "I'm so sorry Rain. You shouldn't have had to be put through that, I couldn't even imagine if my parents split up."

I shrugged "It's fine. I've grown to realize my family's not perfect and never will be. If I spent all my time being depressed about what's happened, I never would know what happiness is and I'd be a huge thing of anxiety."

She nodded sympatheticly "Well Ryker knows the feeling too." He looked back from the passenger seat at Tate, Alessandra, and me. "Yeah" He clenched his jaw and sent them a look "I know the feeling."

I furrowed my eyebrows together, and Ryker turned back around as Val changed the subject "So..Someone want to call Craig?"

"Everything will be alright, so baby get some sleep tonight" Alessandra and I sang just to annoy the guys.

"I-I-I WANT TO LOVE YOU BUT IT'S NOT RIGHT, WHAT CAN I DO?" We continued and the guys were officially annoyed.

"Guys" Tate groaned and through his head back, as the rap part came out "You're so annoying." Alessandra and I laughed as Tate said "Ok. Ryker, I can't take this anymore. We're switching seats."

"Fuck no" He scoffed, rolling his eyes "I'm not an idiot." "That's debatable" I added, and everyone bursted out laughing beside Ryker.

"You know, I like Rain. She's the best girlfriend you've had" Val laughed, and Alessandra laughed "Agreed."

I chuckled, then Ryker and Tate switched seats while the car was moving and Val was speeding through the highway.

Ryker sat down next to me and Tate got into the passenger seat. "Hey" I smiled and he rolled his eyes "Hi."

I kissed his cheek and he looked at me, and pecked my lips. "How long have you guys been together?"

"2..3..months" I shrugged, and Val cut in "Hey! That's a new record for Ryker."

"No" Ryker muttered slumping down in his seat and taking out his phone "Chloe last two years." I tensed up and fidgeted with my fingers.

Ryker rolled his eyes at me "Don't get like that. You know that I don't like her?" "Well the fact that you two slept together on the first day she came back sets me a bit on edge."

"You what?!" Alessandra exclaimed "Ryker Xavier Anderson! You slept with your ex girlfriend the day she came back?! What the hell is wrong with you?!"

I pressed my lips in a thin line and Alessandra shook her head is disgrace "I'm surprised Rain even liked you after that or that you even have a girlfriend."

"Oh please" Tate rolled his eyes "They're perfect for each other." Ryker's phone then started to ring and answered "What?"

There was a few momentsof silence, and Ryker threw his head back and clenched his jaw as he rubbed his face "Ok. I'll take her....Yeah, fine."

He then hung up and ordered Val "Pull off this exit, and stop at the gas station." "What's wrong?" I asked as I tucked a piece of hair behind my ear.

"Melanie.." He sighed as Val pulled off the exit "She's hysteric I guess. Leah and Reece can't calm her down, so now I have to take her."

I nodded and Val parked at the gas station where everyone was. Ryker then got out of the car and walked over to Reece. He took Melanie from him and carried her back to the car, and got in.

"Hey Mel" Alessandra and I said softly, and her eyes were filled with tears as she looked at Ryker "I wanna go home."

Ryker sighed and kissed the top if her head as she sat in his lap. Ryker said Leah was Faith and Melanie's legal guardian, but they both gravitated towards Ryker more.

Also no one knows about the pregnancy yet, and Leah was planning on telling them when we got back to New York, but she's going to start showing soon.

Val got got gas, and paid for it before everyone got back in the cars and drove back to the highway because we couldn't waste any time.

Melanie continued to cry, and I pressed my lips in a thin line. She was only 5..and it was a lot to handle for a 5 year old, because she doesn't even know what's going on. "Ryk, let me see her" I said softly, and he looked at me then handing Melanie to me.

She immediately clung to me as she wrapped her arms around my neck and buried her head into my shoulder. I sighed "It's okay, Mel." She sniffled, and wouldn't let go of me like her life depended on it.

"She takes so well to you" Alessandra said surprised, and Ryker nodded "She always has. Ever since the day she met, Rain."

I tucked a piece of Melanie's long caramel colored hair behind her ear, and rubbed circles on her back to try and calm her down. She stopped crying which was good but wouldn't pull away from me.

Melanie reminded me so much of Ryker. They had the same colored eyes, but we're both stubborn and when had the most beautiful smiles. And when they would laugh it was one of the most amazing things in the world. She defenitely did take after Ryker personality wise and Leah told me she looked just like her mom.

Ryker placed a hand on my thigh and I laid my head on his shoulder as Melanie kept her head nuzzled into my shoulder and kept her arms wrapped tightly around me.

"Thank you" Ryker whispered and kissed the top of my head and let his lips linger there for a couple of seconds "I don't know what I'd do without you."

* * * * * * *

<^> Ryker Anderson <^>

"Hey" Vince greeted as him, Aaron, Felix, and Levi walked up with beers in their hands and handed me one.

I cracked it open and took a sip, then turning my attention back in front of me towards Rain and Melanie on the beach. We were on the west side of the border of Italy by the ocean, and we stopped at a hotel.

Rain had been playing with Melanie for hours, and Melanie's smile didn't leave her face once. They were on the wet sand as Melanie was running around.

"She'd be an awesome mom" Vince stated, as he took a sip of his drink. "Yeah, she seems amazing with kids" Levi added, and I nodded "She is. She's just good with people in general."

Rain then took Melanie's hand as they danced on the beach, and Melanie grinned. Rain then looked back at all of us and waved as she smiled, before turning her attention back towards Melanie.

"God, I love her." I said aloud in an almost whisper.

"You what?" Felix asked, and Vince nodded "Yep. He admitted a while ago."

"Wait...so The Ryker Anderson is in love, with some girl?" Aaron asked. I rolled my eyes "She's not just some girl."

"Dude, your whipped" Levi laughed and all the guys nodded in agreement. "I can't believe this....Ryker Anderson is in love. Oh my God, you're actually settling down." Levi teased.

I rolled my eyes "It's not like I'm marrying her. You make it sound like I'm going to be with her forever."

"Well...are you?" Vince asked. I clenched my jaw and looked back at the beach where Melanie and her were. They were looking for sea-shells right now, and Rain looked up from the ground and her beautiful blue piercing eyes caught mine. She grinned and blew a kiss jokingly before laughing.

I pretended to catch it and smirked back at her. She turned her attention back to Melanie again, and I answered Vince as they were all waiting for an answer "Yeah. Hopefully."

I loved Rain Thompson, from her down moments when she was sobbing her eyes out to when she was smiling with her pearly white teeth and laughing. She was the girl you'd want to have but only one guy got her; and I was lucky and was that guy.

I just wasn't going to tell her..well for now.

* * * * * * *

<^> Rain Thompson <^>

"Come on Mel" I took her hand and led her back to the hotel. We headed towards the hotel, and into the lobby.

I picked up Melanie and set her on my hip "Let's go find your brothers" I said and accidentally bumped into someone. I looked up to see a guy with brown hair and gentle brown eyes and was tan with a built body.

"Ciao bello" He smiled widely at me, and I blinked slowly a few times as I registered what he said which was 'Hello Beautiful'.

"Oh , scusate ho un fidanzato" I said with a small smile as I told him 'Oh, Sorry I have a boyfriend'. He asked "You from America?"

"Yes, I am" I answered with a nod "New York to be exact." "Ahaha, the big city" He smiled and stuck a hand out to me "I'm Anthony. And you are?"

"Rain" I introduced hestiantly as I shook his hand. "What a beautiful name for a beautiful girl" He smiled, and I shifted in my spot uncomfortably. "Is this your little sister?" He asked.

"Uh, no. It's my boyfriend's little sister" I corrected. "Hey Princess" A voice that I knew greeted and I turned around to see Ryker walk up.

"Hey Babe" I chirped and he gave me a confused look because I never called Ryker any 'pet names', but I want this Anthony guy off my back.

I pressed my lips to his and he seemed taken off guard for a second before I pulled back away. "Who is this?" Ryker asked as he nodded towards Anthony and clenched his jaw while sliding an arm protectively around my waist.

"Anthony this is Ryker my boyfriend. Ryker this Anthony" I introduced them. "And why are you here?" Ryker asked bluntly as he cocked an eyebrow at the guy.

He seemed a little taken off guard "See, I was just-." "You know" Ryker cut him off "I really don't care. Just stay away from my girlfriend" then glaring at the guy and pulling me into the elevator.

"That was rude" I accused as the elevator doors shut. "It's rude for some other guy to be hitting on my girlfriend." He took Melanie from me, and I threw my head back against the wall as the elevator went up the floors.

The doors opened and I went down towards Leahs and Faith's room. I opened door quickly and everyone was in there. "Hey. Where's Ryker?" Andre and Augustus asked.

The door then opened again when Ryker walked in then putting Melanie down on the ground "Right there." "We're going to a bar tonight" Luca and Will informed.

"And it's our last night before we have a bunch of driving to take down the Veins" Memphis said.

The Veins...it's the gang that has us mist wanted. They have a huge team, and want us all dead. I've seen news on them and they've killed so many people, especially if you get in there way.

I plopped down next to Liz and Faith on the bed and stared up at the ceiling. A phone started to ring and Neil picked it up "Rain it's yours."

"Great..." I muttered, as I sat up and he threw my my phone, and I caught it before seeing the contact and sighing. "Who is it?" Craig asked.

"My dad" I answered and Ryker came over to me "Give me the phone." "What? No" I shook my head.

"RAIN! Give me the phone" He demanded. "No, it'll piss him off even more" I bit my lip.

"Then put it on speaker" Ryker said, and I stared at my phone nervously "Ok" I sighed "But none of you can talk."

Everyone nodded in agreement, and I answered as I put it on speaker. "Hello?" I answered.

"Where the fuck are you?! I told you to come!" My dad immediately started shouting into the phone, and I flinched.

"Dad-" I started but he cut me off "When you get home, I'm fucking shooting you in the head. You're like you're mother: a bitch! You worthless piece of shit!" He yelled.

Everyone's eyes widened, and Ryker was restraining himself from taking the phone and screaming at my dad. "Maybe if you were like your brothers, you'd actual be worth something and not be useless! You were never even suppose to be born, you were just an accident, that

happened. I told your mother to get am abortion, but she didn't listen" He yelled which turned into gritting.

Tears pricked my eyes and Ryker took my phone and hung up. "Oh my God" Juilet, Cecilia, Elisa, Celeste, and Alessandra whispered shock.

"Rain" Ryker whispered softly, and I looked up to him. Tears escaped my eyes, and he pulled me into his arms and hugged me tightly "Oh My God."

"Rain, you can't live there anymore" Liz spoke shocked as well "It's completely abusive; emotionally and physically. You should just move into my place."

I gripped Ryker's shirt in my hand, and kept my head buried into chest as I tried not to cry audibly, because when I was younger my dad always said crying was a weakness, and that you shouldn't cry because I never have a reason to.

When my mom left and I cried for days, my dad would yell at me the lock me in my room and told me of I wanted to cry to save it for my pillow.

* * * * * * *

"Tell them, tell them all I know now. Shout it from the rooftops. Write it on the skyline, all my heart is gone now. Tell them I was happy and my heart is broken. All my stars are open. Tell them what I hoped would be impossibblleee" I walked into the room to see Faith laying on the bed her and Leah shared with headphones in.

"You know" I said and her head snapped towards me as she jumped "You're not that bad, Faith."

"Uh thanks...."She trailed off, tucking a piece of hair behind her ear. I went over to Leah's dresser and looked for my leather jacket.

"Rain.." Faith trailed off "Can I ask you something?" "Yeah. What Is it?" I asked, it ting down on the edge of the bed.

"Is Leah pregnant?" She asked as she fidgeted with the loose strings of the blankets. I stared at her schocked, and didn't answer.

"Let me rephrase that, who's the baby daddy?" She asked. "Faith.."I sighed and ran a hand through my hair.

"Well?" She asked, and I shook my head "You're to young to be involved in this." "Rain!" She exclaimed "I'm 15, and considering its my sister that were talking about, I should know."

"Ok.." I gave in but sent her a look "But if you tell anyone I'll kill you myself." She nodded slightly and waited for me to tell her.

"It's Craig" I stated with a sigh, and her eyes went wide "What?! How did that happen?!"

"I'm not having that conversation" I said, and she blinked slowly "Leah's pregnant with Craig's baby?" She asked. I nodded slowly "Yep" I said popping the 'p'.

Faith shook her head "For anything it should have been you pregnant with Ryker's baby!" "What?!" My eyes widened "Why me?"

"Because you two are actually together" Faith said, and I shook my head "No. No. No, that's not gonna happen before you get an ideas."

"Surrrreeee Rain" She rolled her eyes. "Faith! I'm 18!" I exclaimed. "And Leah's 26" Faith said with a smirk "It's just a number."

"I can't believe I'm having this conversation with a 15 year old" I muttered, and stood up from the bed. The door opened and Ryker walked in with Melanie.

"What are you doing in here?" Ryker asked, and I grabbed my leather jacket "Just looking for my jacket."

Ryker turned to Melanie "Are you sure you can watch her?" "Yes, Ryker. I think I'm capable of watching my little sister" Faith narrowed her eyes at him.

"Not in Italy-" Ryker started, but Melanie ran right over to Faith "Ok. Fine, Don't leave this hotel; understand?"

Faith nodded, and I waved "Bye Guys" then walking out to the hallway. "Hey Thompson" Seb and Luca smirked as they approached me in the hall.

I pulled on my leather jacket and raised an eyebrow at them. "So we have this bet going on about when you and Ryker are going to..what do you call it?...Sleep together" Seb trailed off.

"And we need that to happen soon because there's money on the line" Luca stated. I scoffed then pushing past them to walk to the elevator.

"So is that a No?!" They yelled after me, and I ignored them as I walked into the elevator and hit a button to go to the lobby.

I looked down at the ground, waiting for the doors to close. Right when they were about to they stopped. I looked up to see Ryker grabbed the doors and hold them open, then he quickly got in so the doors could close again.

He cornered me and smirked down at me "Hey beautiful" then pressing his lips to mine. The kiss was very gentle yet hungry. It was very....seductive. His arms slid around my waist, and pushed me back up against the elevator wall.

His tongue found nine after getting entry. I placed my hands on his chest and the elevator doors opened on one of the floors. I pulled away to see an old couple get in. They both forced smiles as they walked in.

Ryker moved to next to me and rested his hands back on the bar attached to the wall in the elevator. "Aha, you love" The old women smiled at us and she took her husbands hand in hers "I remeber when we were like that."

I shot my eyebrows up, and she nodded with a smile "In my day, I found a man who I hated passionately who was part of a gang, but years later and he's right next to me and married for 50 years with 6 kids."

My eyes widened, and Ryker blinked shocked. Her husband kissed her cheek as she chuckled wholeheartedly, and the doors opened. "Have a nice day, love birds" She grinned then walking out of the elevator with her husband leading her.

"Well..." I trailed off. "6 kids?!" Ryker exclaimed then muttering "Jesus Christ.."

"6..." I whispered shocked and the elevator doors opened again to the lobby.

* * * * * * *

All the girls pulled me out of the bar, and Cecilia handed me a shot glass. I bit my lip, and Liz assured "You'll be fine."

I wasn't huge on drinking, considering my dad's an alcoholic. Plus I've never seen the point in getting yourself to the point eere you can't even see straight. I sighed then putting the glass up to my lips and titling my head back to down the raseberry flavored vodka.

It burned my throat and gave a very sweet taste. I handed to glass to Juilet, and tried not to gag as I broke into a coughing fit.

"Trust me. When you're out of High School this will be your best friend" Alessandra sad and I rolled my eyes at her.

I looked over to see the guys all by the otherside of the bar, smoking...I pressed my lips in a thin line and Juilet asked "You okay?"

"Uh.." I trailed off as I looked back at her "Yeah, I'm fine." "Rain..just go tell him" Leah sighed.

Juilet, Cecilia, Elisa, Celeste, and Alessandra all raised eyebrows at me. "Rain doesn't like when Ryker smokes.." Liz expalined.

"Aha. You want to know what to do?" Celeste asked and I gave her a confused looks. "Go up and take the cigarette then start to smoke it, he'll go bilistc and you'll be able to make your point."

I looked back at the guys then back the girls and nodded "I'll be right back." I walked right up to the guys, and smiled "Hey."

"Hey" They all responded, and I put a hand out to Peter "Can I see that?" As I reffered to the pocket lighter in his hand. Peter raised an eyebrow at me then handing it to me, I then took a cigarette out of the box Andre had.

I pressed down the button of the lighter and the flam popped up. I lit the cigarette end and put it between my index and muddle finger as I started to put it up to my lips.

Right when I was about to put the cigarette between my lips, Ryker grabbed my wrist and took the cigarette from "What the hell do you think your doing?!" He asked angrily.

"What? I'm the legal age for it" I stated. "I don't care if you're the legal age, that does make it healthy for you" Ryker snapped and threw the cigarette on the ground then stepping on it to put it out.

"And?" I pushed. "And it could kill you" He stated. I narrowed my eyes at him "Then what's that in your hand?" I tested as reffered to the cigarette he currently had.

He glanced at it then back to me, and sighed "Fine" then dropping it to the ground and stepping on it "Just don't start yourself, got it?" He narrowed his eyes.

I nodded in agreement, and Luca said "Well...Craig you tried to get Ryker to stop smoking since he started when he was 13, and Rain ask; and he's done." "So whipped" Abe and Seb laughed.

Craig rolled his eyes "Just watch it Thompson, don't do anything stupid while we're here"

I danced with Alessandra in the dance floor and we sang a long to the lyrics of the songs. It turns out Alessandra is really sweet, and very free-spirited.

"I don't care where you've been. How many miles, I still love you" We screamed the lyrics to Sloppy Seconds.

I took a sip of the drink of soda that I had in my hand, and Reece came up and started dancing the try and embarrass us. I laughed, and he took my hand then spinning me under his arm.

The "rap" part came up and Alessandra and I said the lyrics really fast as we tried not to laugh everytime one of us messed up.

"Cold pizza, tie-dye shirts, broken hearts. Give'm here Give'm here. Hand met downs" Reece joined in with obnoxiously singing.

I looked over to the bar to see a group of girls that were dressed in minimum clothes, and I squinted my eyes then to see Ryker in the center of them as he was sitting on a bar stool talking to them.

A girl with blue long hair batted her eyelashes at him and slipped him a paper then gripping his bicep as she giggled.

I became tense and wanted to strangely the girl. "Uh oh" Reece said as him and Alessandra realized what I was staring at.

The girl then leaned over and kissed cheek then putting her lips to his. I saw Ryker's lips react back and move with hers. Before I could even see anything else, I grabbed my keys from Will and walked up to them.

I pulled the blue bambo off Ryker and slapped Ryker on the cheek "What the hell?!" "Rain-" He started "Listen to me please-" and I shook my head

"Maybe your new fuck buddy will listen to you, because I don't want here it" I stated then turning to the girl "FYI, I think a smurf threw up on your head."

Her jaw dropped and I pushed past her as I headed out of the bar and Ryker yelled after me "Rain! RAIN!"

I ignored him and ran out, then grabbing Seb's car, and speeding off, not knowing where I was going.

# Chapter 11

I wiped the tears in my eyes as I watched Pretty Little Liars and stuff my face with ice cream.

Aria and Ezra are just so perfect...

I started crying again, and there was a knock at my door. "Go away" I said with my voice cracking. "Rain, open up. It's me" Liz said.

I closed my eyes shut and groaned "Liz, please just go away." The window then opened up, and Alessandra walked in "Rain, you need to talk to someone."

"I don't want to" I said as I stabbed my ice cream with my spoon then putting it on the nightstand table since it was empty already and I hugged a pillow to my chest.

Alessandra unlocked the door for Liz and Liz shut the door behind her then locking it. "Rain...It's not what it looked like."

"Oh really? Because it looked like my boyfriend was kissing some other girl!" I snapped, and they both sighed.

The door then opened, and my head snapped towards the door, when I saw Ryker walk in. "Get out!" I yelled and chucked a pillow at him.

"Rain, we need to talk" He said, and I yelled "Well I don't want to talk to you, asshole!"

"How did you even get in?" Liz asked, and Ryker dangled a key in his hand. Alessandra then looked at Liz and they both seemed to communicate threw looks.

Then they both stood up and started to walk out. "Where are you going?!" I asked as I grabbed Alessandra's arm. "You two need to work this out" She said and took her arm out of my grip "Bye Rain".

They both walked out and left me alone with Ryker. I glared at them as they shut the door, and Ryker started "We need to talk-"

I ignored him, walking over to the window and shutting it so the cold air wouldn't come in. I was still in my clothes from the bar with my jeans and white v-neck t-shirt.

I locked the window and turned of the TV. "Rain" Ryker said trying to get my attention, but I ignored him then walking over to the speaker thing and turning on a random playlist.

"Would you just listen to me?" He asked annoyed. I turned the volume up higher and he exclaimed "It's not what it looked like!"

I turned the volume all the way up as it blasted. "RAIN!" He yelled over the music, and I then started to walk to the bathroom without looking at him.

He then grabbed me by the wrist and pulled me back. "Let go of me" I gritted as my eyes went dark and heart felt like it dropped just from looking at him.

"Not until you listen to me" He gritted back, and I held his stare that was full of intensity and guilt. I tore my hand away from his grip.

"I didn't kiss her, Rain" He said.

"BULLSHIT!" I immediately yelled "I saw you kiss her! It may not have been first but you responded! "

"No! What you saw, is me trying to pull away from!" Ryker yelled "I didn't kiss her!"

"Well that's not what it looked like!" I yelled. "Rain...I may have been unloyal to a million other girls, but I swear on my fucking life that I wouldn't cheat on you!" He exclaimed.

I rolled my eyes "That's what every fuck boy says" as I cross my arms and he was about to say something but I cut him off "Let me see your phone."

"What? Why?" He asked. "Let me see it, and then I'll see if I believe you or not" I said as I put my hand out.

"What the hell does that have anything to do with anything?! You can't just go through my phone!" He yelled, and I could tell by now that people could here us fighting.

"Why?! What do you have to hide?! Because if you didn't have anything then you would let me-" I started ranting but before I could continue Ryker smashed his lips into mine.

I stood there for a minute shocked then giving right into the kiss. His lips moved in sync with mine, and it was most passionate kiss I ever had.

His tongue slid across my teeth asking for entry before I granted it to him and his tongue found mine. He pushed me back and I hit the bed rail on the Queen sized bed.

I ran my hands through his hair as I tugged on it lightly, and moved back onto the bed so I was laying down and Ryker was over top of me.

Our lips broke apart from air and Ryker pressed his lips to my neck and began to leave a trail of kiss down my neck and jawline.

I closed my eyes as I caught my breath, and placed my hands on Ryker's chest. He moved his lips back to mine, and I responded right away.

He then grabbed the hem of my shirt and pulled it up over my head and threw it on the ground somewhere. His hands roamed my body, and I tried not let memories of being sexual harassed come back into my mind.

The kiss was rough and hungry with. A very fast moving pace. I tugged on Ryker's shirt, and he pulled back to tear off his shirt then pressing his lips to mine.

I placed my hands on his tones chest and moved them up around his neck to wrap my arms around. He moved his hands down my waist, and made it towards the button of my jeans.

He unbuttoned them, then slowly pulling the zipper down. He slid my jeans down my legs then throwing them with the rest of clothes on the floor.

I kept my eyes closed, and everything that made me worry or anxious went away at this moment, because I was so close to Ryker and it was the best feeling in the world.

I broke away for air and he placed his forehead against mine "Are we doing this?" I looked up to meet his bright beautiful blue eyes that were shining.

I nodded "Yeah. We are" I responded breathlessly, and my music playlist of The Fray blasted in the background. Once our lips met again, my hands unbuttoned his jeans, and soon before that we were both only in underwear.

His hands roamed my body and made the way to my bra clasp. "Ryk" I pulled back again breathlessly "I'm not on the pill."

He tucked a piece of hair behind my hair and grabbed a tin-foil packet out of his jean pocket "It's okay, Princess." He tucked a piece of hair behind my ear, as u breathed heavily and he asked "Are you sure you want to do this?"

I nodded "Yeah..I'm sure." His lips tugged up to a small smile and his eyes stared at me with intensity.

His lips met mine again, and with one hand he un-did my bra clasp, and there was no going back now.

* * * * * * * *

My eyes flickered open and then closed once they saw the sun shining through the window. "Good Morning, beautiful" Ryker said, and I looked up to him and pecked his lips "Good Morning."

I laid my head on his base chest and he wrapped an arm around me "How do you feel?" He asked.

"Amazing" I grinned at him, and he let out a small laugh with a slight smile and kissed my forehead "So the feelings neutral" He whispered with his lips against my forehead.

I bit my lip to try and keep a huge smile taking over my face. I rolled to over top of him and he placed his hands on my hips under the covers and questioned "Round 2?"

I pressed my lips slowly to his and smiled. Ryker responded right away as he pulled gently on my upper lip, and there was a knock at the door.

I pulled back and Ryker sighed before yelling "WHAT?!" "Breakfast downstairs. Meet us there" Craig ordered from outside the door.

Ryker threw his head back in frustration. I pecked his lips one last time, and stood up from the bed before finding my clothes quickly.

"God, I hate people" Ryker muttered as he ran a hand through his hair. I pulled on my shirt then buttoning my jeans "You'll just have to wait until we get back to New York" I smirked as I leaned over the bed and pecked his lips again.

Ryker then grabbed hold of me and pulled me down on-top of him before rolling me over so he was then over top of me "That's to long."

I sighed then wrapping my arms around his neck, and he kept the covers over him considering he still wasn't dressed. "But it's worth the wait?" I asked as I cocked and eyebrow at him.

"Absolutely" He smirked then giving me a quick kiss, and standing up to get changed. I ran a brush through my hair and brushed my teeth, then picking up my phone to see a million text and calls from my brothers.

I sighed then putting in my back pocket "I'll meet you downstairs" I called after Ryker; who was in the bathroom getting ready.

I walked out of the hotel room and down the hallway to the elevator, and started texting my brothers back.

Jax: Rain..PLEASE! JUST PLEASE COME HOME!

Ryan: If this is about dad, will set something up. You could go live with Alex for awhile or something

Joel: Sis, you have us worried sick. Just at least respond. Please :'(

I replied back to all of them and then realizing we are 6 hours ahead of them and it was only 3 a.m. there.

I got out of the elevator and went to the cafeteria as I ran a hand through my hair, and I was tired as ever since I didn't do much sleeping last night.

"Good Morning" Memphis and Will both greeted ad they slung their arms over my shoulders and walked with me. "Morning?" I questioned giving them a confused look.

"So..since you and Ryker have been together awhile, we really think you should take your relationship to the next level" Will said.

"Yeah" Memphis nodded "Second base, is right in the ball park and not far of a run. Plus I heard it has awesome seating."

I scoffed at them "Seriously guys? You bet on my sex life? What the hell is wrong with you?! Can't you be like normal people, and bet on horse races or something?"

I pulled away from them then sitting down at the table where everyone was. I sat down next to Alessandra and she smiled "Hey", and handed me a coffee.

"Thank you" I said then taking the coffee in my hands. "You and Ryker make up?" Vince asked, and I nodded I'm response.

"Well duh..they probably made out all last night" Peter spoke. I shifted in my spot and asked "Uh, Where's Faith?"

"She went up to grab her phone" Leah said, and Ryker then came down to slide in the seat next to me. "It's nice to see S.S. Rayker sailing again" Liz smiled.

"That's still a thing?" I asked narrowing my eyes and raising an eyebrow. "A thing? It's a ship that has a fan base" Liz exclaimed.

"A fan base is not you and Leah" Ryker shook his head at Liz. "Whatever" She muttered, rolling her eyes at him.

"AH-AHA!" A voice yelled, and we all looked back to see Faith running through the cafeteria as people gave her weird looks.

She came up and exclaimed "What is this?!" as she dropped something on the table. I then saw what it was and my eyes widened.

Ryker then closed his eyes for a moment and I could tell he internally groaned. "It's a condom packet-.." Luca and Seb trailed off then everyone looked at us.

"You had sex last night?!" Leah and Liz yelled excitedly. The whole cafeteria became silent for a moment and looked at us as we drew attention.

"Oh my God...this cannot be happening right now.." I muttered, wanting to be anywhere but here right now.

Seb, Luca, Memphis, Will, Peter, Aaron, Juliet, Alessandra, Tate, and Felix all shot up yelling "Ha! Pay up!"

I buried my head into my hands as my cheeks flushed bright red from embarrassment.

Craig, Vince, Neil, Peter, Valentino, Abe, Andre, Augustus, Dawson, and Levi all took put their wallets and threw money down on the table.

"Oh my Gosh...Our youngest is growing up so much" Liz said wholeheartedly. I rolled my eyes and Ryker put a hand on my thigh underneath the table.

He put his lips up to my ear and whispered "I'll beat their asses later." The corner of my lips tugged up into a smile as I put my hand over his underneath the table.

* * * * * * * *

"Where is it?" I whispered to myself frustrated as I searched through the drawers. I stood up and ran a hand through my hair as I tried to think where it had to be.

My train of thought suddenly came back and I walked over to Ryker's bed and his bag was on the ground. I knelt down and started to search in the pockets before I pulled out a thing of pills in a container.

I furrowed my eyebrows together then reading the label:

"State NY Pharmacy. Dr. A. Jones

Ryker X. Anderson

Take two tablets daily. "

"What?" I whispered to myself confused. I looked over the bottle to see what it was, and it was prescribed but I didn't know what for.

I searched for his phone in the bag to see if there was anything in there that would explain the pills.

I pulled it out, and quickly typed in his pass-code which was easy considering its my birthday.

0327 was the code, and I went to settings then quickly putting my thumbprint in; encase he changed the pass-code later on, and exiting out to go see what's his messages.

"Hey, Reece-" Ryker's voice approached and I whirled around and jumped as the phone fell out of my grip and onto the bed.

"What the hell are you doing?!" He yelled, and quickly grabbed his phone "Were you going through my phone again?!" He then looked up again and saw the pill bottle in my hand.

"Did you go through my stuff?!" He yelled, then coming over and grabbing the pills out of my hands. "Ryk..what are those for?" I asked worriedly.

"It's none of your buisness" He gritted, and I yelled "What are those for!?"

He started to walk out the room, but I quickly grabbed his forearm and he stopped but kept his back to me. There were a few moments of silence go by and I stared at him.

He then turned around to look at me "Just drop it, okay? Just drop it and forget you ever saw them" then before I could say anything he walked out and slammed the door.

My heart sunk and I ran a hand through my hair as I looked around the room "What have I done?"

* * * * * * *

There was a knock at the door and I asked "Who is it?"

"Room service!" The voice shouted back, and I furrowed my eyebrows in cousin "I didn't order room service.."

All the guys went out and so did the girls. I just wanted to stay back for awhile considering Ryker and I aren't even on looking terms let along speaking terms.

I stood up from the bed and answered the door to see 4 men that were built standing in front of me. "Who-" I began to ask, but then was grabbed and a cloth was put over my mouth, making me breath in the scent I passed out after a matter of seconds.

# Chapter 12

I woke up to noise, and my eyes fluttered open. I stared up a time the ceiling, and it a green fluorescent blinking light that made a buzzing sound shined on me.

I quickly sat up and looked around to notice I wasn't in the hotel room. I started to panic, and looked around the room. It was like an army bunk, with cement floor a bed with a not-so-comfortable matress that only had sheets on, there was a cement door that had a huge lock on it. There was a Very Small winow windows and the room was gross and dirty.

I stood up and started to walk to the door, but then got stuck. I looked back to see my foot tied in metal chain which was tied up to the bed. My eyes widened and I quickly started yanking on the chain, but every time I did it put pressure and inclosed on my ankle.

"What is going on?" I whispered to myself as my heart was racing. I ran up to the window and tried to open it but it was boarded up on the outside.

I saw a door on the side of the room, and I ran up to it then opening the doorknob to see it was a just a closet filled with a bunch of....

I gulped and my I turned pale white as I saw a bunch of....well...let's just say 50 shades of Gray exploded in the closet.

I immediately slammed the door shut and ran towards the door again but fell once the chain wouldn't go any further. The door then opened, and I looked up to see a man with broad muscles, brown hair and black eyes.

"Well, well, you are awake" He smirked. I then realized who it was and started to move back as I was still sitting on the ground. "Oh don't be scared..yet."

"Get away from me" I gritted as he approached me, and put a hand out to me but I stared at it with a glare before he then took it away. "Fiesty one, are you?"

Zeke Monroe....Blake's older brother and head leader of The Veins gang. I only know him because Blake mentioned his older brother was in Italy and showed me a picture.

"I SAID GET AWAY FROM ME!" I yelled with agony filling my voice. "Tsk, tsk. We're not going to make this harder then it has to be, are we?" He questioned.

I didn't answer and pressed my lips in a thin line as I pulled my knees up to my chest and kept a glare in my eye. "Tyson!" He yelled, and the door then opened "Yeah boss?"

My breath hitched in the back of my throat and tears pricked my eyes, as I saw him approached. His piercing blue eyes met mine.

"Rain" He said as his lips tugged up into a smile "How you've been?" I backed up again as he started to approach me, and I gulped silently.

"Tyson" I whispered in shock to myself as my heart felt it was shot when I said his name. "Ohh, don't be such a stranger babe, me and I both know who we are" He smirked as he squated down to my height.

"You and I" I corrected, and he raised an eyebrow "What?" "It's 'You and I' not 'me and you'" I stated.

His smirk grew wider "But see it isn't. I always come first, you should know that by now."

My heart was racing from the panic that was rushing through me, and I wanted to burst out crying but crying was only a sign of weekends to them.

Tyson Blix....my ex boyfriend.

Flashback:

"Come on Rain" He said as he kissed my neck and I pulled away "Tys (Tice), we can't."

"And why the hell not?" He asked getting annoyed. I flinched at his yelling and exclaimed "Because I'm only 16!"

"That doesn't matter!" He yelled "You told me once you finished the finals we could do it again!"

"I know, but-" I started but couldn't finish since Tyson cut me off "I'm going into college Rain, and am the quarterback with a girlfriend that won't put out, do you know how bad that seems to the rest of the guys?!"

I pressed my lips in a thin line as I stood there silently. He sighed and ran a hand through his hair "Rain..baby, I love you."

I looked up to meet his piercing blue eyes and he wrapped an arm around my waist then pulling me closer to him "You know that" He said as he caressed my cheek "And I can show you even more how much I love you if we do this."

I bit my lip and debated about what to do. "We did it before" He said. "Last time we did it, you got me drunk at at a party" I said.

He then grabbed me by the wrist and pulled me closer to him as his grip tightened on my wrist as he gritted into my ear "I told you never to mention that."

Tyson and I have been together for a year, and he was a senior while I'm a sophomore. He was the guy every girl wanted, and the "Bad Boy" around town. He's caught up in some gang violence, but told me not to go to the police.

"Do you want me to get your dad?" He gritted as a threat, then pushing me onto the bed. He climbed overtop of me, and pressed his lips to mine. His hands unbuttoned my flannel then taking it off and throwing it to the side.

I tried to pull awat, but he kept me under his grip and his hands unbuttoned my jeans, and tears pricked my eyes. "Tyson-" I said as I pulled away for a second but he quickly smashed his lips back to mine and this repeated.

His hands unzipped my jeans and he pulled them down my legs. "Tyson" I pulled back but he grabbed my hands and pinned them against the bed on the sides of my head so I couldn't move.

"Do you want to do this the hard way?" He asked annoyed, and I swallowed a lump in my throat.

He then made his way to my bra clasp and I started struggling in his grip as he sucked on the skin of my the side of my neck. "Tyson" I spoke, squirming in his grip "Tyson stop. Let me go."

He didn't listen and his hands went to unhook my bra but I started pulling back from him and he pushed me violently back against the bed. "Tyson stop!" I begged as tears pricked my eyes.

He wouldn't listen to me, and I did the only thing I could and screamed at the top of my lungs "HELP!" as he then covered my mouth with his hand.

The door then opened and Mrs. Blix; Tyson's mom walked in. She stared shocked and Tyson's face turned into anger.

"Rain..." She trailed off still surprised, and Tyson got off me "I think it's time to go home." I blinked repeatedly as I stared at the ground and nodded slightly.

"Come on sweetie, I'll give you a ride home" She said and I nodded, then grabbing my clothes and putting them on. Mrs. Blix cleared her throat "I'll wait for you in the hall", then walking out of the room.

I finished buttoning my flannel, and Tyson quickly grabbed me and pushed me uo against the wall, and his normal piercing blue eyes were black and he gritted "You're so dead, Thompson."

I gulped then pulling away and walking out of the room.

After that, Tyson refused to let me go and forced me to have sex with him or threatened to tell the whole school that I was basically a virgin in bed. I became mute for a month after that, I was put in therapy. I then found the courage to break it off with Tyson in sophomore year summer with the help of Alex.

* * * * * * * * *

<^> Ryker Anderson <^>

I grabbed the cigarettes and a lighter from the dresser. Taking the cigarette out I started to light it, but stopped when I remembered Rain hates cigarettes.

I threw them down onto the dresser and ran a hand through my hair.

Just tell her what the pills are for...

I grabbed the bottle of pills out off the dresser and looked at the label as I studied it for the moment. Anger took over me and I chucked the bottle against the wall, and pills went scattering everywhere.

There was a knock at the door and looked to see Alessandra. "Hey" She smiled slightly, and I shifted my eyes over to the otherside of the room.

"Ryker...just tell her.." Alessandra trailed off and I stayed silent as I kept my back towards her. "You love her, so why is this such a big deal?" She asked.

"It's because I love her" I muttered and turned around to face Alessandra "I don't want her being so concerned about me instead of herself, because that's the person she is."

"Ryk...you're Bipolar, not dying of cancer" She sighed, and I rolled my eyes "It doesn't even matter anyways. Medical bills are adding up, with Melanie's and Faith's payments, Reece's college tuition...it's all to much. I'm going to have to cut the prescription."

"What about Leah?" Alessandra asked as she leaned up against the doorway. "She's already working 3 jobs, and we're both splitting the bills for Reece, Faith, and Melanie" I stated.

"What about Rain?" Alessandra asked and my eyes flickered up to hers and I gave her an Are-You-Serious look. "Don't give me that look, I'm being serious."

"I'm not asking my 18 year old girlfriend who's in high school for money!" I exclaimed, and saying it out loud made it sound even more pathetic.

"Ryker" She narrowed her eyes at me "You know she's just more....well-off. Money isn't a problem for her." I shook my head. Then everyone else barged in breathlessly.

"Rain's missing" Vince said breathlessly and my eyes widened. I quickly grabbed my phone and pushed past them in the doorway. I ran down the hallway, and barged into her room.

It was empty and I walked over to see her phone on the dresser, and there was a cloth on the ground. Everyone came in, and I picked up the cloth and scanned it over. "Someone drugged her" I said as I tried to comprehend what had happened.

Rain's been kidnapped..

"This is all my fucking fault" I muttered, and quickly ran over to her closet where I knew there was a knife, and I quickly put it in my pocket and Craig stopped me "Ryker we should think about this before doing anything stupid."

"Rain's just been kidnapped, and you want to 'think about it'?!" I gritted through my teeth "Because if you think I'm doing that, you've got another thing coming for you" then pushing past everyone.

I took the Skylines keys and ran over to it, then speeding off and trying not to run over everyone idiot that doesn't know how to drive.

I clutched the steering wheel as I clasped my hands around it, and pressed down on the gas and sped through the streets.

This is all my fucking fault...

If I would have never got mad at Rain and left, this wouldn't of happened. She wouldn't of been kidnapped by God-knows-who and taken to God-knows-where.

* * * * * * * *

<^> Rain Thompson <^>

"Let me go!" I cried as I pounded on the door and screamed at the top of my lungs as loud as I could.

"Zeke! Let me go!" I yelled, the chain putting pressure on my ankle. I was pulled back by the chain and collapsed on the ground.

I have been left in this room for hours without anything. It was getting to me, and claustrophobia kicked in, as I was freaking out. I placed my hands on the ground and lifted my head up.

I saw a match under the bed, and I quickly sliding it across the cement floor, but it wouldn't lit. I tried over and over again but it wouldn't light.

I sighed and took my fingernail then sliding it across fast, and it took to a flame. I quickly stood up and walked over to the door as far as I could.

I slipped the match under the door out to the hallway, and hoped to would catch fire to something, so someone would come down here.

I heard it catch to something then a bunch of smoke alarms go off. I backed up and walked to the otherside of the room and stared at the door.

I heard yelling on the otherside of the door, down the hallway. I quickly grabbed a glass cup that was a aside of me and waited for the door to open.

It bursted open and I saw a bunch of guys come in. They came over to me and unhooked the chain from my ankle, then grabbing my arms.

I then through the glass at them and it shattered once it hit the ground. They let go of me, and I quickly sprinted out of room and down the hallway that was on fire.

I inhaled a bunch of smoke and broke into a coughing fit but ignore it. I ran as fast as as I could and had no idea where I was going.

I tripped over a piece of wood on the ground and heard yelling "Hey! Get back here!" I looked back to see se broad guy running towards me.

I stood up from the ground and took off, trying not focus on my ankle I knocked a bunch of stuff behind me so it would slow the down the guy.

I came to a hallway and saw some guy running towards me in the way I was running, and I turned around to see another guy coming at me.

I looked around and began to panic as my breath was heavy and right when they were about to grab me, I jumped up and caught a pipe that lead to a vent.

I pulled up my legs and let the guys run into each other as I hung above them. I pulled myself up into the vent and had a Déjà vu moment back to when Ryker and I were in school after hours doing chores for Mrs. Doyle and I had to climb up to the vent to get to room key.

I shook it out of my mind and tried not to think about him, because right now I'm the priority for once. I crawled down the vent and came to a dead end. I sighed then backed up and kicked a platform.

A whole formed and I jumped out into a hallway. It was flooded with smoke and I squinted my eyes to see a door which led to an exit.

I ran out of the building to what led me to a field in the middle of nowhere. It was all opened and in the far distance there were moutains bordering the land. I quickly ran up a hill indent to try to escape.

I was then tackled to the ground and I looked up to see guy with blond spike up hair that was perfectly messy and bright green Hazel eyes. My breath faltered and he stared down at me as he caught his breath.

Zeke and a bunch of guys came running up "Good Job, Landlock. You caught her." The guy who was overtop of me nodded slightly and stood up from the ground.

I was then grabbed violently by some guys and they threw me back against an old rusty truck, and I hit my head against it.

"You want to play Thompson?" Zeke gritted in my face as he glared at me "Because I'll point a gun up to your head and pull the trigger, cause after that it's Game over."

I stayed silent and we exchanged glares. "Pull a stunt like that again and I won't hesitate to slit you'd throat open. Any words?"

I looked up to his brown eyes that bored into mine and said out of anger "Go burn in hell, fucker."

He punched me straight in the face and I clutched the side of my jaw as blood started to escape my nose.

"Let's go" Two guys grabbed me and pulled me away and back into the worn-out run-down warehouse.

~~

"Hey" A voice said and I looked up to see the guy with blond hair and green Hazel eyes walk in. I clutched the coffee mug in my hands, and tried not to break it under the pressure I put on it.

He walked in and sat down on chair across from me as he leaned closer to the edge of the seat and folded his hands as he stared at me.

"I'm James, James Landlock" He introduced as he stuck a hand out to me. I looked down at his hand then back up at him, and he sighed "Not a hand shaker, I see" then pulling his hand away.

I glared at him, and he said bluntly "I'm not going to hurt you." I scoffed and shook my head "I'm not an idiot, I'm not following for your game, Landlock."

"So you do talk" He tried to lighten the mood "No. Really, Rain. I promise I won't hurt you. This isn't fair that they kidnap you when it's not even your fault."

I raised an eyebrow and gave a confused look "What? What are you exactly talking about?"

He gave me a confused look "Ryker Anderson...he got caught in a faulty drug deal for selling prescription instead of what was ordered."

My eyes widened in response, and I asked "W-what exactly were these prescription d-drugs?"

"Uh...I think they were for Bipolar Disorder" He answered, and my heart sunk

That's what the pills were for...

Ryker was dealing drugs...

"Didn't you know this?" He asked confused "I mean everyone says you guys are really close..and that's why Zeke targeted you; to get back at Ryker. They said they could bring Ryker in by torturing him while capturing him, because that's what would get him."

I took in everything that was happening and looked up at James "You have to let me go.."

"Rain, I'm sorry...but I can't do that..." He shook his head "I'd get us both shot if that happened."

"If you really wouldn't hurt me, you'd let me go right now" I pleaded "Please, Please I beg you."

He stared at me and clenched his jaw as his eyes turned dark. I gave him a pleading face of hope, and he stared at me for a few seconds.

"I'm sorry Thompson. I can't do that" He said then standing up and walking out of the room as he shut the door behind him.

I started to run after him only to be pulled back again by the chain around my ankle that was tied to the bed.

# Chapter 13

"Rise and Shine, sweetheart" A voice that belonged to Austin said. My eyes fluttered open as he turned on the light, and I sat up.

He unlocked the chain around my ankle, and grabbed me by the arm and twisted it behind my back, so I couldn't go anywhere.

I slept for about an hour all last night, and after the nightmare; there was no way sleep was even in vocabulary. I was pushed into the kitchen where everyone was.

Austin shoved me forcefully into a chair, and I sat down on the wooden chair. "Eat it" Christopher ordered as he plopped a plate of eggs on the table in front of me.

"I-..I'm allergic to eggs.." I stuttered, and he gave me an Are-You-Serious look. "She claims she's allergic" Christopher called back.

"Well" Taylor said as she came over and set a bowl of cereal in front of me "Cereal okay?" She asked with a small smile.

I nodded slightly, and Zeke ordered "Taylor. Out in the Hall. Now." Taylor then looked back at him, and followed him out of the room.

I heard a door shut then yelling begin. "We do not make friends, with that bitch! She's bait, not a new member!" Zeke yelled from outside the hall.

I flinched and looked down at the cereal. "Zeke! She's 18, and kidnapped! Plus her boyfriend did the drug deal, not her! Cut her some slack. She should be sitting in school, not some warehouse in the middle of Italy!" Taylor yelled back.

I looked back at the door that was still closed for a few seconds, and took in what they were fighting about. "Don't worry about them" James said as he set a glass of water down in front of me "Zeke's not much of a morning person."

"Or a person..." I muttered under my breath. Because theirs no way an actual human being could be as heartless as him. "What?" James asked, not hearing me.

"Nothing" I shook my head and picked around the cereal. I learned that Taylor and James were the only nice ones, everyone else wanted me dead.

The door then swung open and Taylor walked in as if nothing happened. I also learned that there was parts here.

Zeke was the leader, and bossed everyone around. Derrick and Arthur were main "guards"; meaning if someone was to be captivated, they would do it. Ty, and Logan were coders that controlled all the weapons, cars, hacking. Zac, Hayes, and Lance all did routes for driving. Mark

and Joe were the mechanics who fixed everything. Blade, Benson, and Tyson were basically sex offenders who drew girls in for weapon holding. Clara, Troian, and Shay delt with drug deals and imports/exports of supplies. Taylor and James had job of escape routes, watching enimes, and spying on other gangs.

"Hey sweetheart" Tyson said as he approached me and pressed his lips to my neck, and I quickly grabbed his arm and twisted it back as I punched him. I was then grabbed by Derrick and Arthur.

Tyson held the side of his jaw and his nose was bleeding. My heart was racing and I breathed heavily as he looked up with his piercing blue eyes meeting mine.

"Lock her" Tyson said with his voice cold and husky. "Whoa, whoa, whoa" James cut in.

"You're the one who tried to give her a hickey!" Taylor exclaimed. "Yeah, locking her in is a bit extreme" James said.

Everyone looked at Zeke for the last call, and he looked at me with dark eyes, and he tossed the apple in his hands back and fourth as he thought.

"Lock her" Zeke said final. I was then being dragged out of the room and down the hall. I began to panic as I had no idea what the term 'Lock Her' meant.

Derrick and Arthur came to an end of a Hallway, and Arthur grabbed keys put of his pocket, then unlocking the door.

I was pushed into a very small closet of mirrors everywhere that acted as walls. I fell t the ground once I was pushed, and Arthur then took the door and turned it around so I didn't have a way out.

The door knob was now out in the hallway and the door was replaced with just another mirror wall.

I knew exactly what this was for, and it was to torture someone slowly as they would become claustrophobic and go insane.

The mirror would appear to make the he closet look bigger but then you'd realize it wasn't big by physical touch and you'd only see your reflection surrounding you. It would mess with your mind and mental stability.

I took a deep breath and tried to remind myself it was just a closet over and over again.

I sat down on the ground and pulled my knees up to my chest and laid my head on my knees as I tried to think about anything to distract me.

* * * * * * *

<^> Ryker Anderson <^>

"Ryker..." A voice that was Leah sighed. I kept my back to her as I stared ahead at the ground, and stayed silent.

I then heard footsteps and she came up and sat down next to me. "Ryker, you really need to get to sleep" She said and I stayed silent still.

A few moments passed ands she spoke out of the silence "Your so sleep deprived it's going to start effecting your health."

"Don't fucking tell me what to do, Leah!" I snapped out if anger, and she stared at me for a second.

"Did you take your meds this morning?" She asked knowingly. "Yes!" I yelled, standing up from the bench.

"Why is that I can't be mad without someone thinking I didn't take my meds or am just having moodswings?! Maybe I'm mad because my girlfriend got fucking kidnapped, and I have no idea where she is or what's happening to her!" I yelled angirly.

I kicked a trashcan and it fell over and I placed my forehead up against some telephone pole, and closed my eyes shut as I regretted everything I did.

From not telling Rain in the first place, lying to her about a lot, to her getting kidnapped because I had to be a dick and leave her.

Leah placed a hand on my shoulder and sighed "Ryker, it's all going to be okay. I promise will find her."

"And what if she's dead by the time we find her?! Huh, Leah?! Because it doesn't matter on the gang; they all want to kill her to get to me because I was a idiot and got caught in a faulty drug deal!" I yelled.

"Listen; I can't lie to you, as your older sister I'm going to tell you it's all going to be alright and will be fine. But honestly were trying our hardest to track her down, and I don't know how things are going to plan out" Leah said.

"You remember when mom and dad got rid of us, and we were put in foster care. We all got sepereated over time and weren't sure if we were going to see each other. After days, weeks, months, even years; we finally got out and everything turned alright. That's how this will end up" Leah said.

"I don't understand you, Leah. First you tell me that it's going to be okay, then you say it may not, and then you say it'll be okay again" I scoffed.

She sighed and tucked her blond hair behind her ear "I know, I'm just showing the reality and dreams of the problem. If you dream and hope enough, it'll come true. Just ask Rain, she's the biggest dreamer there is."

I breathed a small laugh under my breath "Yeah, she's not the most optimistic person there is." Leah smiled slightly and chuckled before saying "Now if you actually listened to me for once, things might actually work out."

I rolled my eyes and said "Love you Big Sis." She smiled "Love you too Little Bro" then fist pounding me and walking away to where everyone was mapping things out.

My phone buzzed and I looked down on my screen to see a picture of Rain and Melanie on the beach together smiling and laughing.

I snapped back to reality and answered the call from Dawson.

* * * * * * * *

<^> Rain Thompson <^>

"And if you have a minute why don't we go. Talk about it somewhere only we know? This could be the end of everything. So why don't we go

Somewhere only we know Somewhere only we know?" I repeated song lyrics over and over again under my breath as I hugged my knees and rocked back and fourth.

I was about to break and go insane, because I felt like I was in this closet for days, and the walls were closing in on me. I've only seen my reflection of a reflection from the reflection behind me that was a reflection of the one ahead of me.

My breathing was unsteady and panic coursed through my veins. My face was pale white, and I started hearing things of people whispering in my ear. The whispers were of some other language that I couldn't understand yet it bothered me.

The whispers turned into screams, and a shrieking sound was present. I buried my head into my knees and covered my ears with my hands and screamed "STOP! STOP! LEAVE ME ALONE!"

I began crying hysterically and the screams only became louder and I couldn't escaped them. I screamed at the top of my lungs in agony and squeezed my eyes shut.

I looked up into the mirror and saw a face that was recognizable to me but it turned into a bunch of different things, and then turning from a fire, to knife, then a heartbeat going dead.

"AHAHA!" I screamed and punched the mirror as the glass shattered everywhere and cut me. The screams went louder and felt like if someone stood right up to your ear and just screamed.

I began walking around in a crooked circle hunched over in the closet and had my hands covered over my ears. I cried hysterically and begged the screams to stop.

I eventually feel to my knees once I couldn't take it anymore and sobbed my eyes out and screamed once again. "RYKER!" I screamed in hope, wanting him to just appear.

I was then grabbed and pulled put of the mirror closet. I placed my hands on the ground as I hunched over and caught my breath, stared down at the ground, tears still escaping my eyes.

James pulled me into his chest and rubbed circles on my back. "Ryker" I cried still with hope and wanted just to hear his voice.

"He's not here, Rain" James said quietly and I broke down into tears and James watched me with sympathy and guilt all over his face.

~~~

"Teenage Model by the name Rain Eliza Thompson of age 18, hasn't been seen in weeks. A search warrant has been sent out looking for her, and she was last seen with the New York City Gang; Crusdaes. Her father; Sheriff Dean Thompson has some words to say" A reported informed as she stared right at the camera.

The camera cut to a clip of my dad talking "She's been missing for weeks, and I don't know why she ran away. We have no trackings of her yet, but we tracked her text messages down and are hoping to find her soon."

BULL! He knows where I am, and I didn't run away. Plus I don't have my phone, so the trackings not going to do much.

I sat in the room alone with a blanket wrapped around me and the old early 2002 TV that was as thick as Zeke's skull.

It was 3 a.m., I couldn't sleep and I was convinced I was an insomniac now. After the the mirror closet, I was sent to 'my room' and chained up and locked in.

The door opened and Tyson walked in. I quickly acted like I was asleep, and he seemed to be on the phone with someone.

"Yeah, we got her" He said and a few moments went by "Yeah, I saw the news. Her dad sent put a search warrant and tracking her phone, but she doesn't have her phone."

He opened the fridge and got something out of it then closing it shut. "No dude, we're going to keep her captive and shoot Anderson right in front of her eyes. It's killing to birds with one stone."

My heart sunk in my chest and I kept my eyes closed like I was asleep. "Tomorrow we're going to make her-" He started but then stopped.

I then heard footsteps approach closer to the couch. My body became tense and I swallowed a lump in my throat.

"I got to go dude. Call you later" Tyson said then handing up the phone and throwing it somewhere to the side. I peaked through my eyes and saw him walk in front of the couch and over to a chair that was on the side.
~~~

I screamed internally that he sat down, and moments went by. I then heard a door open then slam shut.

I opened my eyes and right away a pair of hands wrapped around my neck. I looked up to see Tyson and he gritted "You little fucker, I thought you were to old to okay pretend."

I grabbed his hands and tried to peak them off my neck from loosing oxygen. He took his hands off my neck only to pull me off the couch and slammed me up against a wall.

"Reme that day when we were in my room, and I was just trying to be the loving boyfriend I was but you were a litte butch and screamed. My mom then came in and I spent 5 months in jail" He gritted.

"Our relationship was illegal" I gritted back through my teeth. "Yeah, well now it's not" He said then making hands down to the buttons of me jeans, and I tried to push him away but he slammed me back up against the wall.

I squirmed in his grip, and he unbuttoned my jeans. "Tyson, stop" I begged, squirming in his grip. He unzipped them then starting to pull them down.

I stopped him before he could pull them down and kneed him where the sun don't shine. He groaned in pain and grabbed that area. I quickly escaped and ran out of the room.

It wasn't long before I realized Tyson was chasing after me. It wasn't even that he was desperate or horny; Tyson could get any girl he wanted, it was the fact that he just wanted to get back at me.

I came to a dead end, and began panicking. I turned around to see Tyson approach "You can't Run from me Rain." I was grabbed by the wrist and pushed unto the room I was held chained in.

He pushed me down onto the bed and chained my ankle then both my wrist to shorter chains so I couldn't move far.

The metal dug into my skin everytime I moved, and Tyson was overtop of me "Still won't put out? Guess I just have to make you."

"Tyson! Stop it!" I begged and he pulled my jeans down of my legs and threw them to the ground. He then started to pulled off my shirt but I squirmed and kicked to try and get away.

I kicked him off me then standing up and trying to run away when the chains stopped me and he pulled me down to his lap.

He ripped my shirt, and I was left in underwear and a bra. "Let me go!" I squirmed and he kept me under his grip.

He pushed me back onto the bed and pulled off his shirt revealing his 6 pack abs.

Ryker's are better...

"Admit baby" He whispered leaning closer to me and whispering into my ear "Our sex was the best you've had."

"My mom always told me not to lie" I said as I tried to push him off me. He leaned in and pressed his lips to mine. I quickly pulled back from him to make room and pushed him away.

He glared at me and grabbed my wrist then putting them above my head under his grip so I couldn't move. He pressed his lips back to mine and I tried to pull away and squirmed under his grip.

One of his hands moved to under me and put his hand to my lower back then pushing me up against him so we were chest to chest.

His lips felt gross on mine and everything felt so wrong. I didn't kiss back and I wanted to be anywhere but here right now. He grabbed my butt and I flinched.

It wasn't even Sexual harassment..it was becoming rape...

There was a knock at the door and Tyson had to pull away. I caught my breath and relief came over me, Tyson yelled "What?!"

The door then opened and Troian walked in. She gave a shocked look "I knew you were a slut, no one Anderson keeps you around. I mean why would a sex God like him want you?"

I clutched my fist and gritted my teeth together but Tyson kept me back. "I mean he she really go out for the Queens and not peasants. I think we'd be the perfect match, don't you think?" She smirked.

"Troian, leave" Tyson ordered, and she sighed "Fine" then walking out and shutting the door behind her.

"You got lucky Thompson" Tyson said as he got off me and pulled his shirt back on "But that doesn't mean were over" He girtted then walking out and slamming the door.

I sat up on the bed and wrapped my arms around my half naked body since I didn't even have a blanket and couldn't get my clothes back on because of the chains that were restrained me.

* * * * * * * * *

I gripped the toilet seat and puked into it once again and I felt sick to my stomach. There was a knock at the door and Taylor came in.

"You okay?" She asked as she sat down beside me. I still wasn't in clothes because of the chains still on my wrist and ankle. I looked up her and gave her an Are-You-Serious look.

"You don't think your pregnant...are you?" She asked unsure. I shook my head "No. There's no way."

"No way?" She asked raising an eyebrow "You're meaning to try and tell me, You and Ryker didn't sleep together?"

"Ok we did.." I sighed "But we used protection." "Did the Condom break?" She asked and I shook my head.

"Are you on the pill?" She asked and I shook my head again. "I mean.." She trailed off and pulled something out of the bathroom closet and handing it to me.

"It never hurts to try" She shrugged with a slight smile. I looked at her then at the pregnancy stick in my hand.

~~

I sat on the cold cement ground and bit my finger nail as I waited for the results of the test.

I'm sure that I'm just sick or ate something bad. I'm positive that's what it is.

I'm 18..I can't have a baby, and I'm still in high school..Plus Ryker has to deal with his job, bills, plus Melanie and Faith ontop of that.

I then reached for the stick on the sink and brought it down to me. I looked up at the ceiling and closed my eyes as I prayed to God that it wasn't positive.

I looked down and saw it was negative. Relief immediately took over me, and I threw the test away then standing up and walking back to the room.

The door opened and I turned around to see James. "Whoa-" He said then looking away. I sighed and ran a hand through my hair "It's fine..just don't be a pervert."

He nodded then looking back at me "We have a race tonight and we were planning on going to meet with Victory." "Victory?" I asked confused.

He raised an eyebrow "Wow, you're gang really keeps you in the shawdows. Victory...they're out co-gang, and are not be messed with."

I took inhaled a deep breath hand pressed my lips in a thin line. James's eyes then flickered to my chest and I snapped my fingers at him "Stop looking!"

His eyes snapped up to mine "Sorry- You're just so beautiful-..". I was galen back what he said "What?" I questioned.

He scratched the back of his neck and shook his head "Nothing, i-its stupid..I-.." He stuttered nervously.

"You know just because I've been kidnapped by you assholes, doesn't mean I don't have a boyfriend" I gritted annoyed.

"Rain-No..I didn't mean it like that-.." He began "Maybe you should just break up with Anderson. "

My eyes widened and jaw dropped as I couldn't believe he just said to me. I scoffed "Who the hell do you think you are?! I watched my boyfriend be lovey dovey with his EX girlfriend for weeks while I just had to stand by and watch! And you tell me to break up with him after the hell I went through?!"

"Rain, I didn't mean to say it like that!" He defended. "Yeah well you seem not mean a lot a things you say" I said then turning around and walking into the bathroom then slamming the door shut.

* * * * * * * * * *

"Let's go!" Zeke hurried everyone into their cars. Zac held a grip on my forearm and pushed me into a Chevrolet Corvette C7 Stingray.

Zac slammed the door shut, and I swallowed hard. Tyson was aside of me on his phone, James was in the passenger seat and Austin was the driver.

Troian then walked up to James's side and leaned in through the window and pressed her lips to his. I rolled my eyes then looking out of the very small window in the back.

"Get a room" Austin scoffed, and Troian flipped him off as she pulled away from James. "Maybe we could have some fun tonight" She whispered to James as she twirled his shirt around her finger and bit her lip seductively.

"Troian!" Blade yelled from a Italian 2013 Lamborghini Gallardo. Troian gave an annoyed look, then grabbing James chin and making him look at her then smashing her lips onto his.

I think I saw tongue...

"Slut" I muttered under my breath and Tyson looked at me because he must of heard. "Says you" He scoffed.

"I'm not a slut or a whore because I don't sleep around. You're the slut" I defended. James pulled back from Troian and she smirked then walking off in her 6 inch black heels.

The "uniform" was basically the same; white plan t-shirt, jeans, black leather jacket, and the girls had to wear heels because Troian demanded.

Taylor had to lend me a pair of her black heels and my feet were currently killing me.

~~

"Thompson!" A voice yelled and I was beckoned over by Zeke. I walked away from Lance and Logan who were currently watching me like a hawk.

"You're racing" He ordered, and I raised an eyebrow as he started to walk away and I followed "Why? I'm not an actual member."

He stopped and turned around to face me with a glare "Because I said so." "We've seen you race, Thompson" Shay said as he leaned up against a car "You're good. The way you race only comes from natural talent."

Zeke sent him a look and Shay shut up. Zeke said "If you win this I'll do you a favor." "What kind of favor?" I asked, and he ignored me and handed me the keys.

It was a "Due Race" which is two people from each gang racing at once. Due also meant "Two" in Italian. Tyson came up beside me and whispered in my ear "Don't get in my way" then walking off to one of the Lamborghinis. I walked over to the Corvette and swung my legs in.

I took off the heels once I was inside the car and I scanned lover the controls. James came up and the guys did and check up around the cars. I started the engine and asked over the noise to James "Is it Automatic or Manual?"

"Automatic" He answered answered and pointed over to by the controls "See that button. It's a boost if you need it, just make sure you're lane is clear if you use it."

I nodded and tapped the roof "Goodluck" then walking away. I drive up to the starting line and Tyson was right behind me. I looked in my rear-view mirror to see cars lined up.

I bit my lip and clasped my hands around the steering wheel and put my head back against the seat. "1! 2! 3!" The crowd chanted "GO!"

I immediately pressed my foot down on the gas and sped off through the track. I drifted on the turn and kept grip on the steering wheel as my whole body was stiff.

I got off the tracks and onto the road, and headed roads the city. I only knew the route from watching others, but I had no idea where I was. I looked back in my rear-view mirror and I saw Tyson right behind me and cars started to spread out more and there were only a few this far in.

I pressed down harder on the gas and was going 230 miles per hour, and kept eyes straight ahead. A car pulled up next to me and a window rolled down.

"Rain!" A voice yelled and I looked over to see Alessandra. Relief came over me and I yelled "What route?!"

"48!" She answered, and I looked back to see Tyson riding right behind me with only and few inches between us.

My grip on the wheel became tighter and I clenched my jaw "Fuck off, Blix" then changing gears and hitting the boost so I would speed ahead.

Alessandra followed up next to me and we ran and a red light. "Who's racing?!" I called over to her as I glanced at her then back at the road.

"Ryker. He's a couple ways behind. He blocked a bunch of people so I could get ahead or I would've gotten hit" Alessandra informed.

I placed my head back up against the seat and pulled ahead, and Tyson stayed right on my tracks to make sure I wouldn't drive away and escape.

He looked at me right through the window and I glared at him through my rear view mirror, then did the only thing I could.

I stuck up my middle finger, and pressed harder on the gas so I would pull way farther ahead. I turned through streets and Alessandra was right aside me. I then heard sirens.

I looked back to see cops pull out of nowhere and chase after us. I sighed and changed my gears again and quickly slammed on my breaks, and stopped the cops.

I turned the wheel and completely circled them I'm together on the road. My tires shrieked and I leaned in the car as I kept the wheel turned.

After I circled them in a couple of times I sped off again and caught up to Alessandra. Adrenaline was running through me, and I saw as very fimiliar skyline come up.

I looked over to see Ryker and yelled "Why didn't you just tell me you're Bipolar?!" He glanced over at me "Rain, I'm sorry! I didn't want you to be worried."

"Too late for that" I called over "And want to adress the fact the you're dealing drugs, while we're at it?!"

We sped through the streets and were right next to each other and we're going the same speed. "I wasn't taking them, I was just selling them because I needed the money!" He explained.

"You could've just asked me" I exclaimed and looked over at him. His eyes met mine and held my gaze for a few moments.

His eyes were so perfect, and I could get lost in them all day. "Rain" He called over and looked at me.

"I love-" He started but couldn't finish when Tyson hit the back of me and made the whole car Jerk foward.

"Asshole" I muttered, and Ryker pulled ahead, and I followed right beside him. Ryker then took a turn and went off road.

I changed my gears and looked back to see a pissed off angry Tyson. Alessandra tried to keep Tyson blocked from me, but he kept cutting her off. Ryker then took a turn into the woods and I yelled over to him "Do you know where you're going?!"

He looked over at me and nodded "Yeah, just follow through the path and then cross the train tracks, it'll bring you back to the starting lines."

I nodded his instructions and Ryker, Alessandra, Tyson, and I were the only ones over here because everyone went the actual route.

We sped through trees and I made sure not to hit any, and kept my headlights on since there was no light because the trees blocked the sky.

"Go up ahead and over the train tracks" Ryker ordered then changing his gears and backing up to block Tyson. I sped ahead and followed through the path.

I looked back and Alessandra followed right behind me. I saw the train tracks ahead and once I was clear of trees.

I saw the stand next to train tracks and the light was blinking and I heard the train coming. I took a deep breath then slamming my foot down on the gas and gunning it.

I made it through without the train coming ad Alessandra did as well. I waited and saw Ryker and Tyson fighting each other to get ahead.

Then started to see the train approach and them come towards the tracks. I bit my lip and panic came over me.

They sped up and I kept looking at the train coming closer and closer. Right when they got to the tracks the train was only a foot away. They both gunned in and I screamed "RYKER!"

My heart dropped in my chest and I blinked slowly as I silently prayed to myself.

I then saw Ryker make it through, and my heart beat was abnormal. Tyson made it through as well but the back of the car was damaged.

Alessandra sped off again and Ryker yelled "Rain, Go!" I quickly changed changed my gears and caught up with Alessandra.

She led the way through and Ryker blocked Tyson the whole time from getting to me. We got back to the tracks and I saw the finish line. Alessandra and I sped through the track and drifted on the turn.

We both crossed the line at the same time and everyone went crazy as Tyson and Ryker came in behind us. I sighed in relief that this was over and threw my head back against the seat.

People flooded around everywhere and I got out of the Corvette, only to be pushed up against it and Ryker smashed his lips into mine.

I responded right away and wrapped my arms around his neck. He lifted me up, making me wrap my legs around his waist.

His tongue slid across my teeth asking for entry, I granted it to him and his tongue found mine right away.

I tugged on his hair gently, we were chest to chest, and he kept ke pushed up against the Corvette. I pulled away breathlessly and breathed heavily as he pressed his forehead to mine.

"I'm so sorry, princess" He whispered "I'm so Goddamn sorry." I looked up to meet his bright blue eyes and swallowed a lump in my throat "There's something you should know."

"What is it, baby?" He asked, still catching his breath. "The guy was Tyson; my other ex boyfriend who sexually harassed me."

Ryker became tense and his went dark and danger was written all over him. "He..He uh..." I stuttered "He tried to force me to have sex with him last night."

Ryker put me down and immediately stormed over to Tyson. I followed him "Ryker! No!" I said as I grabbed his arm but he pulled it out of my grip.

He grabbed Tyson by the shirt and slammed him up against a car "You tried to rape my girlfriend last night?!" He yelled with anger filling in his voice.

Everyone was quiet and crowded around to see what was happening. "Huh?!" Ryker yelled and punched him straight in the face and pushes him through the window and the glass shattered.

"I-" Tyson began and Ryker gritted "Oh, I'm not done with you yet, asshole" then punching him again and kneeing him in the balls.

Tyson was a bloody pulp by now and beaten up horribly. "Don't you have ever fucking touch her again" Ryker yelled and slammed him up against another car.

He punched him in the gut and Tyson coughed up blood. Ryker then grabbed a baseball bat that was just by some pole and started to raise it. I quickly ran into the circle that had been formed around Ryker and Tyson by everyone in the drag race.

I grabbed his arm and pulled it back "Ryker Xavier! No!" His eyes stayed on Tyson and he pushed me behind him.

"I don't even want you looking at her ever again, understand?! If you go anywhere near her I will have your ass landed in jail faster then you could blink" Ryker gritted in his face.

He dropped the bat and turned around to start walking away and pulling me behind him.

When Ryker started to pull me through the crowd he was stopped by Zeke and the rest of the Veins Gang. "Where do you think you're going Anderson?" Zeke asked.

"Taking my girlfriend home, Monroe" Ryker gritted through his teeth, and anger ran through him. Zeke tsked and shook his head "You should have that about that before you got caught in a faulty drug deal."

"She didn't do anything" Ryker gritted and clutched his one fist and his grip on my hand tightened. "But if we get her, we get you too" Zeke said and then smirking.

"That's the good thing about love, it can destroy" He smirked and Ryker was about jump him but I intertwined our fingers so he wouldn't go anywhere. "Get her" Zeke ordered at the snap of his fingers.

I was grabbed by Blade and Arthur by the arms as they tried to pull me away from Ryker. "Hey! Hey!" Voices yelled.

Craig, Vince, Neil, Liz, Will, Peter, Leah, Alessandra, Juliet, Celeste, Luca, Seb, Valentino, Aaron, Levi, Abe, Andre, Tate, Augustus, Dawson, Felix, Memphis, and Reece all came out.

Then James, Christopher, Austin, Derrick, Benson, Lance, Shay, Mark, Zac, Joe, Ty, Logan and Hayes. Taylor, Clara, and Troian all came out.

"I think we could settle this in a civilized manner" Craig said to Zeke in a stern voice as he stepped in front of all us. "Civilized isn't in my vocabulary, Brown" Zeke retorted.

Ryker wrapped arm around my waist protectively and pushed me behind him. "She's just a kid, Monroe. Cut her some slack" Craig gritted.

"She's not a kid, Craig" Zeke laughed without any humor and with evil "Austin, Derrick" Zeke ordered.

Austin and Derrick started to approach when Ryker hid me behind him and punched them both. "You asked for it Anderson" Zeke said then snapping his fingers.

Logan and Blade grabbed Ryker by the arms and pulled him back. Craig, Vince, Neil, Liz, Will, Peter, Leah, Alessandra, Juliet, Celeste, Luca, Seb, Valentino, Aaron, Levi, Abe, Andre, Tate, Augustus, Dawson, Felix, Memphis, and Reece all started to come towards them but the rest of the guys blocked them off while bringing out a gun and they all froze.

Derrick and Austin still had a grip on me, and Zeke ordered "James." I watched slowly and James sighed then stepping out and pulling a gun out and slapping a magazine full of bullets.

He raised it up and my eyes widened as Ryker's went dark. James's finger wrapped around the trigger and he took and deep breath.

# Chapter 14

Derrick and Austin still had a grip on me, and Zeke ordered "James." I watched slowly and James sighed then stepping out and pulling a gun out and slapping a magazine full of bullets.

He raised it up and my eyes widened as Ryker's went dark. James's finger wrapped around the trigger and he took and deep breath.

"WAIT!" I yelled and everyone's attention snapped towards me. "I'll go" I breathed.

James put down the gun so it pointed to the ground, and Zeke nodded, snapping his fingers.

Derrick and Austin let go of me for a moment and I walked up to Ryker. The guys let go of Ryker and stood off to the side.

I placed my hands on his chest then gripping his shirt in my hands and pressing my forehead to his. "Rain don't do this" Ryker whispered.

I looked up to meet his eyes "I'll be okay." "Rain, you know I'd take a bullet for you" Ryker said as he clasped his hands around my wrist.

"I know" I managed to get out "That's why I'm doing this. I don't want you to get killed, because if you were; I don't know what I'd do."

"Rain don't do this" He said and I shook my head "I have to" and my voice was cracking.

Tears started to prick my eyes and guilt took over his expression. A single tear escaped my eye, Ryker wiped it with his thumb then pulling me into his chest and hugging me tightly.

I sniffled into his chest and whispered feeling horrible "Baby, I'm so sorry, it's all my fault." I gripped his shirt in my hands and squeezed my eyes shut as a tear escaped and I took in his scent of Cologne and peppermint.

He rested his chin on top if my head and he whispered "I don't want to let go of you." I pulled back and placed my hand on the side of his face where he had stubble growing.

"Shave for me, okay?" I said with a small smile tugging up at the corner of my lips. He nodded and I sighed then pressing my lips to his and giving him a quickly kiss.

I squeezed his hand and walked away and let go of his hand. I wiped the tears and Hayes grabbed me by the wrist then shoving me into the Corvette.

* * * * * * * *

"Get up" A voice ordered and I was then kicked in the side by someone. I opened my eyes and I looked up to see Austin. I sat up and realized I was on the ground, because I must of fell off the bed in my sleep.

He unlocked the chains around my wrist and ankle then dragging me out to where everyone was eating breakfast.

Austin let go of the grip he had on my arm and walked over to get some food. I was then body checked and stumbled off to the side.

"Oops. Sorry" Troian said sarcastically "I didn't mean to hit you, there's just..not enough room for rodents."

I was about to jump her when I was then grabbed and Troian stood there with her arms crossed and smirk plastered across her face.

"Thompson!" Zeke yelled warningly. Benson put me down and I was pushed down into a wooden seat at the table.

The door then opened and Tyson walked in with bruises, cuts, dry blood that stained his skin, a black eye, busted lip, etc.

Clara walked up to him and gave him pain killers. Tyson took them from her and glared at me the whole time. Taylor came over and gave me a bowl of cereal then going over to help Tyson.

James came and sat down in the seat on the side which was close to me, and I picked around the cereal to avoid eye contact.

"Rain, about yesterday..I didn't mean it like that" James said. "Really?!" I snapped, looking at him "Then what did you mean it by?! Because I'm pretty sure that saying "Break up with your boyfriend" means only one thing, it doesn't have double meaning!"

James looked around and everyone was to engrossed in their conversations to notice us. James grabbed me by the arm and pulled me out of the room.

Once we were out in the hallway I tore my arm out of his grip "Let go of me, Landlock!" "Listen Rain, I saw you and Ryker yesterday; and I know there's no way you guys would break up but-."

I crossed my arms and looked off to the side and avoided looking at James. "RAIN!" He yelled frustrated then unfolding my arms, and my head snapped towards him.

He pinned me back up against the wall and my breath faltered. He looked down at me and was silent for a few moments.

"If you stage a break up with Ryker, Zeke won't want anything to do with you anymore. He'll let you go, and go after another victim" James explained.

"No!" I exclaimed. "Rain, just listen. Please" James cut me off and I pressed my lips in a thin line as I waited for him to go on.

"If you do this, Zeke will realize that it's worthless to keep you, because you have no connection to Ryker" James said.

I pressed my lips in a tight line and crossed my arms. "No" I spoke out "I'm not going to stage a break up, with a boyfriend. So get this through your thick skull, Landlock: I'm. Not. Breaking. Up. With. Him."

"Rain if you would just-" He started but I cut him off by sending a punch right into his jaw. He moved his head to the side once my fist came in contact with his jaw and he held it pain before looking at me.

"That's that last I'm saying it. Now shut the fuck up and leave me alone, Landlock" I gritted then walking away from him.

* * * * * * * * *

I was pinned up against the wall and I gripped Zeke's hands that were wrapped around my neck. I tried to pry his fingers off, but he wouldn't budge.

"What did you fucking say to me?!" He gritted, and I was gasping for air "Don't mess with me, Thompson. I'm this close to killing you."

I squeezed my eyes shut for a moment then opening them and giving Zeke a begging look. He then let go of me and I fell to the ground.

I gasped for air and the circulation started in my lungs again. Zeke's glare bored into me, and I looked up at him with years pricking my eyes.

Derrick and Arthur grabbed me by the arms and pulled me off the ground then dragging me out of the room and into 'my room'.

They shoved me up against the bed and grabbed the chains then locking one around my ankle and another around my wrist. They locked the door and walked out.

Tears started to escape my eyes and I screamed. I stood up and kicked over a chair as I screamed at the top of my lungs out of anger and frustration.

I should have just listened to my dad and came home.

I shouldn't have ever gotten evolved with gangs and the violence.

I shouldn't have gotten evolved with Ryker Anderson...

I gripped my hair in my hands and squeezed my eyes shut. Words couldn't explain how I felt right now, because it was to many emotions combined.

I grabbed the wooden chair and slammed it up against the wall as hard as I could. It broke into pieces and fell to the ground.

I went up to the door and yanked on the lock, hoping that the door would open. "LET ME GO!" I screamed repeatedly with agony filling in my tone.

I lost it...I was going insane, I collapsed under pressure, hatred, and constant worry because I had no control over anything. It seemed like I was a puppet and someone had me on strings.

Once there was no answer, I sat down on the ground and pulled me knees up to my chest and sobbed my eyes out. "Please..." I whispered to myself.

~~

I woke up to the feeling of something flooding around me. I quickly sat up and saw water seeping through the pipes.

It was already high up; to my knees, and I saw a pipe that broke and water was flooding out of it. I climbed up to try and stop the water and block it but the chains pulled me back.

I tried to block the water from coming out but it just soaked my clothes and rushed out. I ran over the door and screamed "LET ME OUT!"

No one answered as usual and I ran around to try and find something to cover the pipes with. "LET ME OUT!"

I pounded on the door in hope that someone would come. I climbed up to by the pipes and tried to hold them together, but I slipped by the water and fell.

I fell and smacked my head against the cement ground that was flooding with water. Pain came over me, and my vision went blurry.

Before I knew it, everything seemed to slow down and go black.

〇 James Landlock POV〇

"James! Let's go!" Troian yelled and she pulled me out of the building where water was flooding.

The pipes bursted under the pressure running through them and flooded the building. Everyone was already outside and Troian pulled me out.

"They're here!" Clara said to the rest of the gang, and their heads all snapped towards us as we approached them.

"We're flying to North Carolina. I called Archer already and he said they'll meet us in OBX" Zeke said.

I stared at the warehouse, and felt something was off. "Where we getting the tickets?" Taylor asked as she crossed her arms.

"Well jump someone" Troian shrugged "We've done it before."

"RAIN!" I blurted, and sprinted towards the earehouse before anyone could say anything. I ran as fast as I could and broke through a window.

Water flooded the halls and I looked around to find a shortcut to get to Rain's room.

I saw a wall and I kicked a whole through it then walking through and getting over to the otherside of warehouse.

Once I got to Rain, I quickly yanked on the lock over and over again and I saw water was seeking out of the door. I pulled the door open and saw Rain on the ground with water over her and she was passed out.

Moving quickly, I unhooked her from the chains then picking her up bridal style and carrying her out as I looked around to find the quickest way out.

The water rose and rose as more flooded out. I ran down the halls and Rain was still unconscious in my arms.

I bodychecked the exit door and ran out. Taylor ran over to me quickly with worry "Set her down, set her down!"

I laid Rain down on the ground, and her face was pale white, her lips were blue and pressed together in a thin line, and her eyes were closed. She was bleeding in the back of her head, and I don't know what from.

"Don't know CPR?!" Taylor exclaimed. "No Taylor! I haven't done it since the 8th grade and that was on a manikin!" I exclaimed.

"Well can't you try?!" Taylor yelled and everyone came over. "Tyson you now CPR, you do it" I said hurriedly with worry.

"No" He simply said "I'm not doing anything for that bitch. Do you know what the hell she's put me through?!"

"Tyson! She's not breathing for God-sakes! She could die!" Taylor yelled "Stop thinking about yourself for once!"

I shook my head then placing my hands on her chest. I pressed down on her chest and did 30 compressions and whispered "Come on Rain, wake up."

I finished the compressions then titling her chin back and pressing my mouth on her and giving her 2 breaths.

Her lips are so soft...

I shook my head at myself and told myself it wasn't the time to think about that. I did compressions repeatedly and then breaths, and repeated the process.

~

I pressed my lips to hers and gave two breaths, and I then heard a gasp for air. I pulled away and Rain's eyes flew open.

"Oh my God" I whispered in relief "You're okay." She coughed to try to get the water out of her lungs, and she clutched her head before pulling her hand away to see it covered in blood.

"We have to get her to the hospital" Taylor said. "She'll be fine" Zeke muttered.

"Zeke! This is serious! She cracked her head open and she might have concussion!" Taylor yelled.

"Fine. Let's go" Tyson muttered as he grabbed her hand and pulled her up off the ground fast enough to give her whiplash.

He dragged her over to one of the cars and shoved in her into the backseat them slamming the door shut.

* * * * * * *

<^> Rain Thompson <^>

"Rain..." The doctor trailed off as she walked in with a clipboard in her hand "Blix..?" My head snapped up to hers, and I looked at Tyson who was sitting in the chair, and he sent me a look.

"Uh..y-yeah" I stuttered, my eyes flickering down to the ground and blinking a few times before I looked back up at the lady. "I'm Dr. Butler, I see you're from America?"

I nodded slightly "Yeah, New York." "And you fell, that's how you hit your head?" She asked, flipping through a bunch of papers.

"I guess.." I mumbled, and she moved closer to me and said "Well I'm gonna take a look at your head."

She looked at the back of my head and moved my hair, then examining it and put pressure in some spots that made me flinch.

She pulled away and said "Well you're results came back said you did have a concussion. You did hit your head pretty hard, but the cut will heal on its own so we're not going to do stitches.

"Is this your husband?" She asked as she looked at Tyson, and he stood up. I was taken back by her question, and Tyson answered "Yeah, I am" as he clenched his jaw.

"Well make sure she doesn't do much movement and is on bed rest for a few days. She can take pain killers to help, and sleep will help" Dr. Butler informed.

Tyson nodded slightly and she clapped her hands together "Well you're good to go, just check out at the front desk" then walking out.

"HUSBAND?!" I yelled angirly as I got off the examination table. "I had to, or they would call your dad and I really don't think you want him coming after you right now" He gritted.

I pressed my lips in a thin line and crossed my arms. "So you should be thanking me, Thompson."

I swallowed a lump in my throat "T-Thank you.." I stuttered in a mumble under my breath. He walked out of the room and I sighed before walking out as well.

We came to the front desk and Tyson signed my name and his name then giving the lady working at the desk money for the hospital payment.

He grabbed my forearm and pulled me out of the hospital. "Um...I actually have to use the bathroom" I said, and Tyson gave an annoyed look while rolling his eyes.

I ran back into the hospital and walking up to some guy that was leaning up against the wall. "Hey, can I borrow your phone? I don't have mine" I asked.

He nodded then handing me the phone. I quickly dialed Ryker's number because I knew it by heart, and waited as it rang.

I bit my lip and kept looking back at the door where Tyson was on his phone. "Hello?" Ryker answered.

"Ryk, I'm at the hospital-" I started and Tyson looked up at me and his eyes went dark "Rain!"

"North Carolina" I blurted to Ryker then hanging up before he could say anything. I handed the guy back his phone and Tyson came up then grabbing me by the forearm and gritting "Don't you fucking try" then dragging me out of the hospital.

* * * * * * * *

I watched out the airplane window and laid my head against the window and seat.

"Please stay seated as we are about to land in our destination" The flight intendant said over a speaker.

It was a 9 hour and 58 minute trip from Italy to North Carolina. It was now 3 a.m. east coast time. I was happy to at least be back in my home country.

I was sepereated further from Ryker and the rest of the gang. They didn't know where I was unless they caught onto to me saying North Carolina over the phone.

I felt like I was stuck in eternal whole and it had no end so I just kept falling and falling because there was no bottom to hit.

I had a migrane and it felt like someone kept hitting me in the head repeatedly with a hammer. I took pain killers that Clara had given me because she felt bad and pitful.

~~

I was grabbed by Christopher and Ty as they dragged me up to a old warehouse that was in the middle of a nowhere on a abandoned road.

Running a hand through my hair, walking up to the warehouse; I was exhausted and sleep deprived with droopy eyes. I struggled to keep my eyes open and felt as if I could pass out anywhere.

The door then opened and a gang of people walked out. I recognized them from Reece warning me about a bunch of different gangs; they were known as the "Liberty Gang" and we're co-workers with The Veins.

"Rain Thompson" A guy about mid 30's smirked as he came over to me "It's so nice to finally meet you. I've heard so much about you."

He put a hand out to me and I glared at him then his hand and back at him. "Not a hand shaker, I see" He said as he pulled his hand back "She's a Fiesty one, Zeke."

Zeke scoffed "I know." "Oh where are my manners?" The guy scoffed at himself "I'm Archer Hastings."

He then started pointing to each person as he said their names "This is

Cato Spears, Nevada Mitchell, Marley North, Reagan Con, Eve Jonas, Gunner Jennings, Felicity David, and Axel Lively."

I stayed quiet and pressed my lips together in a tight line. James cleared his throat as he walked up beside me "Archer, Rain is a but tired from the trip. I'll just take her to her room."

Archer nodded "1st room on the second floor." James put a hand to my lower back and started leading me over to the house. "Sleep tight, Rain" Archer smirked.

I looked at him and already knew this guy wasn't good. James led me inside and I swallowed a lump in my thraot.

# Chapter 15

"Now if she does it like this. Will you do it like that? Now if she touches like this. Will you touch her right back? Now of she moves like this. Will you move like that? Come on, Shake, Shake, Shake it" I heard a voice singing as I came put behind the corner of the wall.

I looked to see Marley and Eve washing dancing and singing around the kitchen as they washed the dishes. Eve jumped up and down and her blond hair bounced around her.

"2007?" I asked as I walked into the room, and Marley and Eve stopped then looking at me. Marley cleared her throat and tucked a piece of hair behind her hair.

"Yeah..we were the wannabe scene girls but mom's wouldn't let us cut our hair to a fringe" Eve chuckled "What about you?"

"Eh..I was 9 and in modeling so I was never allowed" I said as I thought back to being tormented by flashing cameras and directors for hair and makeup.

They both chuckled and the door opened. I looked to see James walk in, and I immediately turned around and started walk out once our eyes met.

"Rain-" He started and I didn't hear the rest once I walked out of the kitchen and slammed the door shut behind me.

"Rain. Stop. We need to talk" James voice approached again and he walked behind me.

"I don't want to talk to you, asshole" I said stern, without looking back at him. I walked down the halls and down a staircase to go to the room I was assigned.

James then grabbed my wrist and whirled me around then pinning me back up against the wall. My breath faltered and his chest pressed up against mine.

His green Hazel eyes met mine and I swallowed a lump in my my throat. James blinked repeatedly a few times and he stared down at me as he kept a hand by my head so I couldn't go anywhere.

"You really don't remember me..." He whispered audible for me to hear. I gave him a confused look "What?"

"You don't remember me.." He trailed off, looking down at the ground for a moment. "Remember you from what?" I asked completely confused "I've never met you in my life."

"Rain.." He sighed, looking up a me, pressing his lips in a thin tight line "Group Therapy."

"How'd you know I went to group Therapy?" I asked still confused out of my mind as to what he was talking about. "Because we were in the same group" James stated.

"What? No we weren't" I shook my head at him. "Does Porter ring a bell?" He asked and my eyes snapped up to his.

My eyes widened and I froze "What?!" "My my names James Porter Landlock....I went by Porter at the time because I didn't want anyone to recognize me."

"No, no, no..You can't be Porter. Porter and I were friends, I know Porter. He moved to Italy when he-...." I started to trail off then looking up at James.

"You once snuck out a midnight with your friends and went to Walmart just to dance in the parking lot to 30H!3 hits while dressed in a banana costume" He said to prove it was him.

I chuckled at the memory of that and then looked at James "It really is you.."

Flashback:

"Jax, I don't need to go to this" I argued for the 88th time today "I'm perfectly fine. I don't need to talk to some strangers about my life."

"Sis, you need this. You have to let it out somehow, and if you talk to people in your same kind of situation, they'll understand" Jax stated as he pulled into the parking lot.

"I have friends you know. I can talk to them" I huffed as I slumped in my seat. "Marilyn and Kayla don't understand what's going on. They have perfectly happy family's" Jax narrowed his eyes at me.

"That's not true" I protested "Kayla's mom is always on business trips." "But she comes home" Jax cut in.

"Now go. You're going to be late" Jax nodded towards the building. I rolled my eyes then opening the passenger door and getting out as I slung my backpack over my shoulder.

I fixed my stupid ugly uniform and walked inside the building where there were people sitting in the waiting area. I went up to the main desk and signed my name in then taking a seat somewhere.

I sighed then staring up at the ceiling and waiting as I was already bored out of my mind.

~~~

"Porter...how about you tell us something about yourself" The councilor; Lisa said. I threw my head back and stared up at the ceiling bored, and crossed my legs.

"Uh.." A voice said and I looked to see who it was "I'm Porter, I'm 16...and I hate my parents." I put a hand over my mouth and looked away as a tried not to laugh but it escaped my mouth anyways.

Everyone looked at me and Lisa sent me a look "Rain..is there a problem here?" I shook my head as I pressed my lips together "No, not a problem at all."
~~~

I felt eyes on me and I looked to see Porter staring at me intensely. He had green Hazel eyes and blond hair, was built and he was in a black t-shirt with jeans.

He had a busted lip and bruises that were fading in different places. "Porter you may continue" Lisa said as she looked back at him.

"My mom's a alcoholic, dad's a drug addict. Both of them have relapsed and are abusive. I was taken away and put in foster care with fucking horrible foster parents. One night my mom hit me with a baseball bat, my dad pushed me down the steps and told me to get out; so I did. I lived on the streets and honestly that was better then the shithole I live in now" He scoffed as he clenched his jaws "You know I wish I was a rich kid...They have it all."

"Well I'm sorry to hear that Porter..Does anyone have something to say? Some advice?" Lisa asked as she looked around the circle of kids with messed up lives.

I raised my hand and she looked at me and nodded "Yes. Rain." I turned to Porter and said bluntly "Fuck you."

"RAIN!" Lisa exclaimed "You're 14, that language is not necessary." I rolled my eyes then looking at Porter "Just because someone has money doesn't mean they have it all. My mom's a fashion designer, my dad was a lawyer and now a Sheriff. My dad's abusive and a alcoholic and tried to shoot my mom right in front of me. One day I woke up with a note taped on the kitchen counter from my mom saying that she left for California and breakfast was in the fridge. Does it seem like I have it all to you?"

Porter clenched his jaw and stared at me before a smirk appeared on his lips.

After that we clicked and did everything together, we were inseparable at times. "Porter" lived in the Bronx and I wasn't allowed to go down there by myself considering I was only 14.

One day Porter declined all my calls and messages. Days went by and I didn't hear from him then on the news I saw that they found a dead body at the crime scene and said it was Porter.

"Why didn't you tell me?" I asked in a whisper as I was still in a state of shock "I thought you died.."

"I just thought you knew....The minute I saw you, I knew it was you because you had the same beautiful piercing blue eyes" James stated as he stared down at me.

Not gonna lie, I did have a crush on "Porter" when we were friends, but the age difference seemed weird at the time since he was 16 and a junior, I was only 14 and a freshman.

I shook my head "No..No it can't be you, Porter died. The police found his body from the shooting." James denied "No Rain. They found some guy and thought it was me because I ran away from a foster home and there was search warrants for me. They just jumped to conclusions and said it was me."

"And what about Italy?" I asked confused. "I did move to Italy, I met Zeke and took me in."

"Then that means I thought you were moving to Italy and that's why you ignored my calls, then you were shot dead" I whispered to myself as I tried to remember what I thought a couple years ago "Oh my God."

I looked up at James and he blinked at me slowly a few times. I wrapped my arms around me as I stood up straight and he slipped his arms around me to return the hug.

I buried my face into his shoulder and closed my eyes shut as tight as possible. "I missed you so much" James whispered into my ear.

* * * * * * * *

I was grabbed and slammed down against a flat surface that was wooden by Cato and Gunner.

Gunner strapped me down and I swallowed a lump in my throat as they strapped my arms above my head so I couldn't move and Archer smirked as he walked in.

We were in a room that had cement walls and floors, a huge glass window that overlooked the city, and it easy pretty empty.

"This is something I like to do to all my victims" Archer smirked "It's fun for entertainment."

Everyone was in the room standing to the sides, and I blinked slowly as I stared up at the ceiling, knowing this wasn't going to be good.

"See my father was a army sergeant, and he had to come over all weaknesses. So they put him through this technique called waterboarding" Archer explained as he approached closer to me.

I squeezed my eyes shut as I internally screamed because I knew what waterboarding was. I started pulling on the rope that had me tied down to the wooden board and squirming in my spot.

"You'll feel the sensation of drowning and suffocation. We have a few questions we'd like to ask you, but you wouldn't answer them without force. Now, we're going to ask you a question and if you don't answer will put the cloth over you until you answer it. It's quite simple, understand?" Archer smirked evily as he clasped his hands together.

"Gunner" Archer snapped his fingers. The lights then turned off and a huge one appeared on me; one that was almost blinding.

Cato got a soaked cloth ready and Gunner got buckets of water. "1st question" Archer started "Where is all weapons for Crusades hidden?"

I pressed my lips in a thin line and I swallowed a lump in my throat, because I was never suppose to tell where all our weapons were hidden.

"No answer?" Archer asked, then sighing "Guess will do this the hard way."

Cato then put the soaked cloth over my face and Gunner started pouring water on me. I squeezed my eyes shut under the cloth and gripped the rope that was tied around my wrist.

Water poured and poured for what seemed forever and my lungs started fill up to point where I couldn't breath.

Torture was an understatement. It wasn't so much painful but it was a kind of pain that you only can come over by trying not think about it.

I started to choke on water and couldn't swallow the water down so it stayed in my lungs as more water poured and poured on top.

"Off" I heard a voice say and it belonged to asshole #2 aka Archer. Cato took the cloth off my face and my eyes opened as I gasped for air.

"We're going to ask you another question..something a bit more personal. I mean you are the one that knows Ryker Anderson the best" Archer smirked widely, and I swallowed a lump in my throat.

I glanced over as much as a I could and James was standing up against a wall with his jaw clenched and fist clutched as Taylor was restraining him back because she knew that if he tried to stop this; they'd shoot him in a heartbeat.

"How are these girls related to Ryker?" Archer asked as he showed me a picture of Faith and Melanie.

"I've never seen them in my life" I lied, because if they found Melanie and Faith they would kidnap them to get to Ryker.

Archer's eyebrows shot up in amusement and he started "Alright. Next question: Where are Ryker's parents?"

"Dead.." I trailed off, and Archer's head snapped towards me "She's lying. Cato, Gunner; you know what to do."

Cato put a cloth over my face and Gunner started to pour the water again. I struggled under the grip of the rope and tried to scream but if I did water would fill my lungs.

Words couldn't describe how I felt. I was becoming dizzy and lost feeling in my arms, and almost if I was about to collapse.

Panic started to come over me. I couldn't see anything, couldn't hear because everything was an echo, and couldn't breath.

"ENOUGH!" A voice shouted with anger and the water stopped then the cloth was pulled away from me. I gasped for air again and James untied my wrist from the board so I could sit up.

Coughing up water, Taylor and Clara came up to me and handed me a towel. "James" Troian spoke as she walked up and grabbed his hand "She deserves it. Don't try and stop it."

I pressed my lips in as thin line together and stayed silent and kept the towel wrapped around me. "Troian" Felicity spoke up "No one deserves this kind of punishments, for something her boyfriend did; not her."

"Oh Shut up Felicity. Stop being so sappy, we've done this a million times; what's the big deal" Regal cut in as she had her arms crossed and examined her black painted polished nails.

"That's a bit harsh" Nevada said "She's only 18." "So what" Axel scoffed "James is 20 and he got kidnapped when he was 16."

I looked over at James and he clenched his jaws then shifting his eyes to Archer and Zeke. "That last question was a test to see if she had been lying. I already knew the answer, and she said they were dead which is a lie" Archer stated.

"W-What?" I asked confused. Everyone looked at me and Archer said "Oh..did your ever-so-loving-boyfriend lie to you again?"

I blinked slowly a few times "What do you mean?" "Ryker Anderson's parents aren't dead. His parents got rid of him and his siblings when he was 8; because they were so poor. They all grew up in foster homes" Archer explained as he played with a pocket knife in his hands as he stared down at and smirked.

He looked up from the knife and and at me "They all grew up abused by strangers, moving one place to another....His parents live in North Carolina now, you know. They're divorced but I've tracked them to see if I could get anything out of them. His father's name is Callum, his mother's name is Arena. Parents both are still poor, Callums an alcoholic as well."

A pang hit me in the chest, making my heart sink. Guilt came over me, and I realized why Melanie wasn't always with Ryker or Leah, why Ryker was so concerned when he first found out I was abused, why I saw him at that foster care a couple months back when we still hated each other.

Ryker was only shaped into the person he is today because of his past. He never had anyone to fend for him, never had a place to call home, or even know if he was going to be in the same place within a week.

Our relationship is based off lies...

He didn't tell me he was medically Bipolar and lied about the medication.

He said his parents died in a car accident when he was younger.

He never told me he was selling drugs for extra money and that he was most wanted for worldwide gangs.

Those were the only lies I did know about him, there's probably still some left that he just doesn't tell me or makes up an excuse.

I was mad, guilty, and upset all at the same time. A bunch of emotions came over me and I wanted to scream and cry at the same time.

"Now. Rain, we want you to do something" Archer said and snapped his fingers, making Joe and Ty come up. Ty pulled something out and it was a black glock 19 with a loaded magazine in it.

Taylor and Clara were pulled back and Ty came next to me. Joe handed slid a mac laptop in front of me, and I swallowed a lump in my throat "I'm more of a PC type of girl.."

"This isn't time for jokes, Thompson" Zeke gritted. Archer ordered "I'm want you to call Ryker, and tell him that you're breaking up with him."

"WHAT?! NO!" I yelled, and Ty quickly got the gun ready and put it up to the side of my head. James immediately started to come but was grabbed by Blade and Logan.

"Rain" Archer tsked as he shook his head "There's a gun up to your head, I don't think this is time to be difficult."

I gulped and my eyes flickered to the laptop screen. I took a deep breath, and squeezed my eyes shut for a second before reopening them.

I went to the facetime option and typed in Ryker's number since his number is the only one I know by heart.

I sat up straight and shifted in my spot. I moved the mouse over to the call button and clicked on it.

It rang, rang, and ran for what seemed like eternity. Everyone moved so they weren't in the screen so that it wouldn't look like I was being forced to do this.

It finally answered and Ryker's face appeared as well as Alessandra, Craig, Reece, and Vince.

He looked like an absolute mess, with bags under his eyes and exhaustion that was written all over his face. They were in the skyline because I could tell by the interior.

"Rain.." Ryker said in an almost whisper and I took a deep breath and bit my lip. They all started bombarding me with questions about where I was.

I stayed silent and waited for them to stop. Which they did when they saw I wasn't talking. "Rain..just tell us where you are.." Ryker sighed as he stared at me through the screen.

"Ryk...I didn't call to tell you where I was" I managed to get out as I tucked a piece of hair behind my ear. I looked over at James who was still being restrained and sympathy was in his eyes.

"I...I-I..um..." I stuttered, not wanting to say it. Ty wrapped his finger around the trigger, and I gulped as I stared at Ryker through the screen.

His bright blue eyes were tired and weary and bored into me. "Ryk..this is really hard for me to do..." I trailed off and wiped my eyes as tears began to prick them.

"We just don't work together. Our whole relationship is based off lies...with the medication, your parents, foster care, selling drugs" I started and his widened as he realized I found out "It just all feels like a lie. And I don't know if that's all there is but I can't live with secrets."

"Rain don't do this" He whispered as his voice saddened. I sighed and wiped my eyes again as there were now tears and one escaped my eye and traveled down my cheek.

"I'm breaking up with you, Ryker."

My heart fell at those words escaping my mouth and I felt instant regret. He didn't know I was being forced into this, he didn't know I didn't mean it.

I hung up the call and shut the laptop and put a hand over my mouth and tried to stop myself from crying but it didn't last long.

<^> Ryker Anderson <^>

I got out of the car and slammed the door shut and flipped over a park bench. I clutched my hair and stared up at the night sky.

This is all your fucking fault asshole!

"Ryker, everything is going to be alright" Alessandra tried to reassure as she stood by Craig, Reece, and Vince by the car.

"No its not!" I gritted as I whirled around to face them "Rain just broke up with me because I lied to her and she found out everything!"

We were in North Carolina because I knew Rain was here from the phone call, I just had no idea where she was and all I wanted was to find her.

"Rain's out there somewhere, with a gang of assholes and being tortured for something I did!" I yelled in anger and another car came up and parked.

Leah, Melanie, Faith, Neil, Tate, Liz and Will came out and they all had worried looks. "Ryk..I'm so sorry" Leah whispered.

I squeezed my eyes shut and threw my head back as I gripped my hair and tried not to kill everything in sight. "Rain..please" I whispered in hope.

~~~~~

I stared at the table and the waitress came down and set a beer down. I continued to stare down at the table until she walked away.
~~~~~

Which she did, and I grabbed the beer and downed it like it was a shot. Felix, Dawson, and Craig said we had to stop and figure out the route and plan.

It's 2 a.m. and we're at a 24/7 diner; it was mainly for truck drivers so they could stop and get something to eat. It was a 50-60's themes with checkered floor, sky blue square tables, red booths, and a jukebox.

I couldn't stop thinking about Rain..I couldn't get her out of my head..It seemed impossible. It is impossible.

I love her..

Seriously Ryker, get a grip! Stop being so sappy that she broke up with you.

I fought with my inner conscience internally and a voice interrupted "Hi. I was wondering is you have $5 dollars you could lend me?"

I knew that voice...

I looked up to see brown hair and blue eyes that I knew. She stood their and started to say something but stopped.

"Mom" I said shocked with my eyes widening, she put a hand over her mouth to and tears pricked her eyes "Ryker.."

# Chapter 16

<^> Continuing in Ryker's POV <^>

I couldn't stop thinking about Rain..I couldn't get her out of my head..It seemed impossible. It is impossible.

I love her..

Seriously Ryker, get a grip! Stop being so sappy that she broke up with you.

I fought with my inner conscience internally and a voice interrupted "Hi. I was wondering is you have $5 dollars you could lend me?"

I knew that voice...

I looked up to see brown hair and blue eyes that I knew. She stood their and started to say something but stopped.

"Mom." I said shocked with my eyes widening, she put a hand over her mouth to and tears pricked her eyes "Ryker.."

I was in a state of shock and couldn't believe it was her. I haven't seen her in 12 years, but she didn't change much. It's not the best thing to say but I just figure'd she'd turn into a drug addict or alcoholic by now.

I didn't know what to do and neither did she. She didn't even seem like my mom, she just seemed to be like some stranger I knew.

"Ryker!" A voice dragged on and Melanie ran up to me. Standing up, I quickly picked her up and shifted her over to my side.

"Melanie.." My mom whispered as she stared at her with mezmorization in her eyes. Melanie didn't seem to draw attention towards her till Leah, Faith and Reece walked up.

"Hey bro, I need your keys-." Reece started as they approached then freezing in their place. "Mom." They both whispered in utter shock.

"Oh my Gosh...you're all so grown up.." She said as tears were in her eyes. Reece pulled Faith into his side and hugged her, knowing she was about to cry.

"Where have you been?" Leah asked in an almost whisper and tears pricked her eyes as well. "I moved down here 9 years ago." She answered "Where have you?"

"We've all been living in New York City." Reece stated as he rubbed circles on Faith's back. "What have you come all the way down here for?" She asked concerned as if she knew something was wrong.

I shifted my eyes to somewhere else in the restaurant and clenched my jaw. "Ryker's girlfriend got kidnapped.." Reece trailed off and realized he said girlfriend as a current phrase.

"Right. And we should probably get going." I said, handing Melanie to Leah and walking out of the restaurant. It was down pouring, Thunder rumbled and lightning struck.

"Ryker! Ryker!" Leah's voice yelled after me as she ran out after me "Ryker stop!"

I stopped walking and turned around to face her "What Leah?!" I snapped. "Ryk..I know you're going through a lot right now, but you have to stop and calm down for a minute-" She sighed.

"You want me to calm down?! Leah I know you're blond and all but don't be dumb for a minute! Rain's somewhere out there kidnapped with her ex rapist boyfriend, and one of the most powerful gangs! And ontop of that she broke up with me! So don't fucking tell me to calm down!" I yelled.

Rain poured came down faster and faster and I was soaked by now and could barely see Leah.

(Don't any of you dare comment "Ha. Get it Rain...")

"We wouldn't be in this situation if you actually thought before making your actions!" Leah yelled.

I tensed up and stared at her for a moment, pressing my lips in a tight line and clenching my jaw.

She then realized what she said and covered her hand with her mouth as guilt filled her eyes "Oh my Gosh-Ryker I'm so sorry...I didn't mean it like that-"

"But you did" I cut her off "Fuck you Leah. You know family is suppose to have each other's backs, but you basically just stabbed me in mine." I turned around and started walking down the street without knowing where I was going and Leah yelled after me but I ignored her.

~~~~~

"That will be $50.00" A guy with a foreign accent and dressed in a Hawaiian shirt with khakis and sandals said.

I sighed then pulling out my wallet and handing him some money. He took in exchange he gave me the key for the bedroom.

I snatched it from his hand then walking up down the hallway and searching for room 8-A. It was a shitty ass shady motel, but I didn't feel like searching and I didn't have the money for a hotel.

I unlocked the room with the key and walked in to where the 70's apparently threw up. There was a white radiator beneath the window, which viewed out to trees. Plaid printed curtains were hung, the bed was a full-size and covered in a thin orange blanket, a small wooden
~~~~~

nightstand with a purple lamp on it. There was a small painting of some city hung above the bed, a leather chair was in the corner of the room by the radiator with a small wooden table by it.

I shut the door behind me and threw my keys down onto the bed and walked up to the window where there was a repeating tapping sound on the glass from the tree branches. I pulled the curtains shut to block out the sound, and flipped over a table in anger because of everything that was happening.

My phone was going off like crazy but I declined everyone's calls and ignored their text. I raised my arms above my head and placed my hands ontop of my head and closed my eyes to try and not to punch a whole through the wall.

~~~~~~~

I chucked the beer can into the garbage can and turned off the ancient TV that had an antenna on it. I tore my shirt off and threw it on to the leather chair, and plopping on my back onto the bed.

I stared up at the ceiling that was covered in weird patterned wallpaper that you'd find in your grandma's house along with her collection of porcelain dolls.

I looked at my phone and saw over 100 text and to many missed calls to count. I reached into my pocket and took Rain's phone out of my pocket. I took it because it was left behind at the hotel room in Italy, and not that it mattered to her because she could by a new phone without a problem, but I just figure'd I should take it.

I sighed then typing in what I think is her passcode; 0328. When it was right a small smile tugged at my lips because it was my birthday, but I quickly realized we weren't together anymore and the passcode was old news.

I hestiantly clicked on her contacts, and scrolled through and coming to her dad. I hit the call button and put it up to my ear as it rang and rang a couple times.

"Yes?" Sheriff Thompson answered. "Sheriff..It's Ryker Anderson" I said stern.

"Why do you have my daughters phone?" He asked in a snobbish tone. "Your daughter's been kidnapped" I sighed taking a deep breath.

There was dead silence for a few moments and he didn't say anything for a few moments which felt longer then what they were.

"Where?" He asked with a cold hard voice. "North Carolina" I answered stern, and clenching my jaw.

"I told her to come home" He accused as almost it was nothing and he didn't care "She'll have to deal with it."
~~~~~~~

I was in disbelief at to what he just said "W-What do you mean?" I asked. "I mean that I told her to come home instead of running off with you and the rest of your hood rats."

"Sheriff this wasn't her fault-." I started but he cut me off "You do know that I don't approve of your relation with my daughter. I don't need her running around with some druggie with mental health problems and a prison record. She has to learn her consequences."

"What kind of fucking father are you?! Rain hasn't done anything wrong! Stop treating her like she's a piece of shit, because you're such an asshole! Your own daughter has been kidnapped and you don't even care! Go fucking burn in hell you sick bastard" I snapped through the phone then hanging up.

I rested my elbows on my knees and leaned forward and clutched my hair with my hands "Rain, I'm so sorry" I whispered as if she was right next to me and could hear me.

~~~~

"Ryker, don't!" Craig yelled, and held me back. I turned around to him and held a glare "Rain's about to be killed and you're telling me not to do anything...Wow, Craig; you really don't know me" I scoffed.

I slapped the mag into the gun I had and headed out. Running down the hallways, I stopped at a corner and peeked around to see two guys.

I moved swiftly out to the hall and pulled the trigger twice. They both clutched the part where I hit them and fell to the ground. I walked up to them and grabbed the guys guys and unloaded his bullets and put them into my magazine.

I left them on the ground as they bled profusely. I ran down the other halls and searched for Rain and the room she was in.

I soon found it and bursted through the door to see Rain being grabbed and slammed up against a wall.

Everyone's eyes snapped towards me, Rain looked up at me and gasped in shock as relief came over her tired eyes that had bruised Skin.

Some guys came towards me and punched me and knocked the gun out of my hand. I kicked the guy in the gut and sent him flying backwards into a wooden table which broke once he hit it.

I was then punched in the jaw and put in a headlock, and struggled to get out of the guys grip. I tried peeling the guys arm off around my neck but he wouldn't budge.

I stared at Rain, and her eyes bored into mine. "You know Ryker.." Zeke smirked "My plan was to kill you, but I came to realization if I killed Rain, it would kill you slowly and suffer the rest of your life because the guilt would always follow you."
~~~~

"Don't fucking touch her" I gritted, glaring at Zeke and if glares could kill Zeke would've died 27 times now and recarnate just so I could kill him again.

Zeke smirked wider and Archer handed him a revolver. I struggled in the guys grip that was wrapped tightly around my neck, and elbowed him in the stomach to try and get out.

I quickly looked up at the windows in by the high ceiling and saw an address painted on the walls.

Rain was silent and pressed her lips in a thin line as she was held up against the wall. Zeke pointed the gun down at the ground and loaded it with bullets, then raising it slowly and pointing it at Rain.

I yelled and shouted threats and anger came over me. His finger wrapped around the trigger and Rain gulped as a single tear escaped her eye and traveled down her cheek.

"Goodbye, Ryk" She said, and I gripped the guys arm and quickly twisted it back and elbowed him in the gut. He let go of his grip on me and Zeke pulled the trigger.

BOOM!

"Rain!" I yelled, and started to run up but was quickly pulled back and I looked at her body that fell to the ground and she her body became paler then normal.

I stared completely in shock and my whole world seemed to stop, as I saw her lifeless body lay on the cement ground with blood seeking through her shirt.

I shot up and my breath was heavy and I was sweating. I quickly got up and put on a shirt and grabbed my keys and phone then slipping on my shoes and storming out of the room.

I ran down the hallways and called Craig and it was 3 a.m. He answered "Hello?"

"Meet me at the gas station we were at earlier. I know where Rain is" I said then handing up right away. I threw my keys down onto the front desk and ran outside.

I squinted my eyes and saw a motorcycle. I smirked and walked up to it "It's been awhile since I hotwired something."

* * * * * *

<^> Rain Thompson <^>

"Let me go!" I cried with tears sobbing down my face and Tyson pinned me up against the wall "Shut up" He girtted putting a knife up to the side of my cheek.

I gulped and became silent "Tyson, please" I pleaded staring into his piercing blue eyes. He put pressure on the knife, making it dig into my skin and cutting in.

I flinched in pain, and the door opened. James walked in, but Tyson didn't turn around, instead he just kept his gaze on me. "Zac and Joe wanted you in the meeting room, they said something about a drug deal" James informed Tyson.

Tyson clenched his jaw and let go of me "You got lucky, Thompson." He walked out of the room with his shoulder hitting James.

I held back tears and James walked up to me as I looked down at the ground and my feet that were covered in filth from the grounds.

"Rain, I'm so sorry" James said as he pulled me into a tight hug and rubbed circles on my back "You shouldn't have to be going through this."

Breaking into tears, I cried into his chest and clutched his shirt in my hand "No one cares" I cried. "That's not true" James spoke softly "I Care about you Rain."

"LIAR!" I yelled, pulling out of his hug "If you cared about me, you'd get me home!" "Rain...I would if I could" He sighed.

"YOU CAN!" I screamed as I tried to walk further away but the chain restrained me. "If I let you go, I'D GET US BOTH SHOT!" He exclaimed.

I shook my head at him "No. No you're just like everyone else. You're playing this role so you don't seem like the bad guy when in reality you are and you're the worse of all!"

"Why am I the worse ?! He asked giving me a disgraceful look. "Because you're the one who tricks me! The one that thinks everything's going to be okay and makes me think it when you're holding be captive. YOU'RE THE LIAR, James!" I yelled.

He pushed me back up against the wall and my breath faltered as we were chest to chest. His eyes flickered to my lips and I swallowed hard, and blinked slowly.

He leaned in and his lips brushed against mine as he stayed there for a few seconds to see what I was going to do.

His lips pressed against mine, and I gave in right away as my back was up against the wall. His arms snaked around my waist and pressed me up against him.

I wrapped my arms around his neck and his tongue found mine. He picked me up and I wrapped my legs around his torso.

He carried me over to the bed and laid me down as he was overtop of me without his lips leaving mine. His hands roamed my body and I placed mine flat on his chest.

James pulled back a second just to pull off his shirt and I looked at his 6 pack abs for a second as I put the tips of my finger tips on them before looking up to meet his eyes.

"Rain..I like you" He whispered loud enough for me to hear. My eyes went wide and my heart fell as guilt came over me.

"James..this was a mistake..I'm so sorry, I didn't mean for this to happen" I said feeling guilty. He got up and clenched his jaw "Of course" then starting to walk out.

"JAMES! Wait!" I yelled as I grabbed his hand and he turned around to look at me "I'm sorry. It's just with Ryker- and I didn't mean to do this."

"You're like every other girl Rain, I thought you were different; but your not. You play guys and trick them into thinking you like them but then say you don't" James gritted.

"I like you James, just not like that. Please, you're the one that's there for me and I can't make it through this with out you" I pleaded.

"Fuck off Rain" He said angrily then starting to walk out. I quickly caught his forearm and he turned around to glare at me.

He grabbed the extra chain that was on the ground that led to my ankle then pulling it apart then together to make it snap and tighten on my ankle.

I fell to the ground and clutched my ankle as tears pricked my eyes. He walked out of the room and slammed the door shut. Tears escaped my eyes and by now I was full on crying.

* * * * * *

I stared ahead at the wall and my mind ran through thoughts. A picture of Ryker's face when I called it off appeared in my mind, and I squeezed my eyes shut.

If I just ended this is be better for everyone..if I just wasn't here...

Turning on the faucet, I sat in the bathtub filled with water and water that started becoming dirty from all the filth coming off from me. I slid under the water and closed my eyes and stayed under.

I heard the faucet running water crashing into the tub and the water slowly rised and rised past my head. I pressed my lips in a thin line, keeping my eyes closed.

The water was cold but a mixture of hot at the same time. My mind set was filled with the whole gang, my brothers, and just being home. I clutched my hands into fist and I couldn't breathe.

Just end it, Rain..

It was like the waterboarding but seemed less painful because no one was forcing me. Everything seems less painful when you do it yourself instead of it being forced upon you.

My lungs couldn't breathe any oxygen and everything went fuzzy. I heard a door open and a voice scream my name, then everything went black and relief came over me.

~~~~~~~

"Oh my God." James said in relief as he walked through the doorway "You're okay." "What do you care?" I muttered under my breath.

James, Marley, and Felicity found me and pulled me out of the water. I sat on the ground, tightening the towel around me at the thought of James seeing me naked.

Marley rubbed circles on my back in a concerning way. "Don't do that again." Zeke warned, pointing a finer at me. Everyone was in the 'living room' and I was being lectured.

As Zeke went off, Felicity interrupted "Ezekiel!" Making everybody draw attention towards hers and silence filled the room. "Can't you see she's depressed!? You kidnapped her, made her break up with her boyfriend, torture her constantly, and ontop of that; You're making her become suicidal!"

I swallowed a lump in my throat and pressed my lips in a thin line as everyone's stares turned towards me. "Get her dressed. We're going out." Zeke clenched his jaw.

Felicity and Marley both took my hands and led me out of the room and to the room I was held captive. Marley handed me some clothes and I mumbled "Thank you."

I headed into the bathroom and got dressed. I brushed through my knotted hair quickly and looked at myself in the reflection.

Bags were under my eyes, I had bruises and cuts, and looked broken. I sighed and turned on the faucet of the sink, and splashed water on my face to try and make myself wake up from this nightmare.

I looked up into the mirror with hope and I still looked the same. I wasn't in a nightmare, I was living one for reality. Pulling on the deniem jacket I was giving, I finished off the clothes.

Marley gave me black skinny jeans, a white sheer v-neck shirt, and a deniem jacket. It made me look somewhat put together, but not much.

I was a puzzle that couldn't be completed because it had missing pieces. I clutched the sides of the sink and closed my eyes shut as I thought about Ryker.

We're not together...we aren't Rain & Ryker, we were just Rain, and Ryker.

There was a knock at the door and Felicity asked "You okay, Rain?" My eyes flew open and I sighed then calling out to her "Yeah! I'm fine."

Wiping my eyes to get rid of tears, I walked out of the bathroom where Marley and Felicity were.

~~~~~

Austin came around the otherside and opened my door. I got out and standing on the cement black top covered in stones, I looked at the North Carolina sky that was a pink-orange.

Red sky at morning, Red sky at morning: Sailors take warning.

"Hey." A voice said softly, and James approached me. "I don't want to talk to you." I mumbled angrily as I started to walk away towards the restaurant.

"Rain, wait." James said, grabbing my hand and turning me around to face him "I'm sorry about earlier-..I didn't mean to come on strong like that."

I looked down at the ground and he took my hands in his with took me off guard and I jumped. "I can't lie and try and pretend." He said "Because I wouldn't just be lying to you, I'd be lying to myself."

"I like you, Rain." James said. I closed my eyes for a second and took a deep breath. He let go of my hands, placing his index finger under my chin, tilting my chin up to look at him.

"I don't like you, James." I admitted to him. He cupped my face in his hands and stared into my eyes "You're lying."

"No" I shook my head "I'm not. I don't lie, Landlock." "You use to like me when we were younger." James said starting to get angry and frsutrated.

"I liked Porter. But you lied to me, Porter was a completely different person; and it I was just some 14 year old girl crushing on some guy...I grew up James."

"Rain, please. You're just indenial from breaking up with Anderson." James shook his head. I sighed "No, James. I'm heartbroken, not in denial."

James stared at me with his Hazel green eyes boring into me. He started to go on again but I grabbed his face in my hands and smashed my lips to his.

My lips felt like a brick wall against his and for a couple of moments his lips stayed on mine, before I pulled away.

"No Spark." I stated, shrugging "I'm sorry James, but if I kiss you and there's no spark there's no actual feeling. When Ryker gives me the smallest kiss, it makes me stomach erupt with butterflies, electricity go through me, and like fireworks are going off."

"Don't kiss me again James, because there's no point."

I pressed my lips in a thin line and gave him a small sympathetic smile, before turning around and walking in aside the restaurant.

# Chapter 17

"So Rain." Nevada spoke out of the silence and everyone looked at me "How's the modeling buisness? I mean I've seen you in magazines and everything..pretty big deal if you ask me."

"Oh.." I trailed off, scratching the back of my neck "It's alright I guess...Nothing special." "Really?" Eve asked "I expected it to be fun."

"Alright, let's cut to it" Zeke cut in "I don't want any funny business, Thompson. We're moving you to James's room."

My head snapped up to him as well as James's. "What?! Why?!" I asked quickly, not wanting to be by James because the tension was present. "Because I have my reasons, now don't argue it."

I glanced up at James and his eyes were cold, jaw clenched, and he stared down at the table. Looking over at the door, I saw a fimiliar face.

My eyes widened and my heart lifted in my chest. I was never happier before, and I quickly said "I have to go to the bathroom."

"No. Not without supervision you're not, and all the girls are soft and will let you go." Archer stated. "Ah-hem" A voice cleared and we looked to see Troian.

"Troian go with her" Benson ordered, and I screamed internally. Troian and I both got out of our seats. I started to walk towards the bathroom as Troian followed right behind me.

"How's Anderson in bed?" She asked unexpectedly, and I took everything I had to not turn around and slap the bitch. Clenching my jaw, I continued walking and ignored her. "I mean with his skills..God damn, it must be like having sex with-"

"Troian, stop!" I interuppted, turning around to face her "Just because I can get a boyfriend and you can't doesn't make it okay for you to make comments about mine."

Her lips turned up into a smirk as she rested her hands on her hips "Ex Boyfriend, Ex. He isn't your boyfriend anymore, honey. He's probably fucking some girl he met at a bar and having the time of his life."

I tensed up at the thought and a shiver went up my spine. Jealousy started to get to me and I reminded myself it probably wasn't true anyways and just one if Troian's remarks.

"Just like you did with James." She said, getting in my personal space. "I did not sleep with James." I gritted, glaring at her.

"Oh but you almost did. And he's not yours" She gritted. "He kissed me, so go talk to him yourself instead of taking it out on me." I gritted at her again.

She stared at me with a glare and I turned around walking into one if the stalls of the bathroom. Going to the one on the end, I locked it and stepped up onto the toilet seat. I pulled down the vent cover, and pulled myself up.

"God, I hate this." I muttered under my breath, and crawled through on my elbows. I sneezed a couple of times because of dust, and made turns to try and get out to the backroom where the fancy dinners were.

I peeked through an ending and saw I was in the right place. I pushed the cover down and swung my legs out then jumping down into the kitchen. Quickly grabbing a waitress apron that I splashed flour on, and taking someone's baseball cap and throwing it on. I put some flour on my face then walking out to the room.

I went up to a table and behind the girl. I tapped her shoulder "Would you like a refill?" I asked, getting her attention.

"Oh, No-" She started, turning around to face me. "Rain?!" She asked shocked, and I nodded with a small smile "Hey, Shaliene."

She quickly stood up and dragged me away from all the adults she was with "Oh my Gosh! You haven't been answering my calls, texts, and you haven't been at school! I thought you actually died or ran off with Ryker or something!" She rambled while hugging me tightly.

I pulled back from the hug "What are you doing down here?" I asked, and she sighed "Visiting some relatives. NOW COULD YOU TELL ME WHAT'S BEEN GOING ON?!"

"Ok, ok, but Shae you have to promise not to say anything." I narrowed my eyes at her and she nodded "I promise."

"I was kidnapped by a gang in Italy" I bit my lip and her eyes went wide. "YOU WHAT-" She began but I quickly put a hand over her mouth.

"Shae! Hush, they're here right now." I said, pulling her hand away from her mouth and looking around. "I'm calling the police-" She started, pulling out her phone.

"No." I said, taking her phone away from her "They kidnapped me to get back at Ryker because he did a faulty drug deal. If you call the police he'll get busted."

"Your boyfriend's a drug dealer?!" She whispered yelled. "Ex boyfriend.." I trailed off, biting my lip and my heart falling at the words. She blinked slowly at me "Wait..what?"

"I broke up with Ryker..it's a long story" I said, and I heard a voice yell my name. My eyes widened, and I said to Shae "I need you to call Ryker" as I wrote his phone number down on a piece of paper "And tell him 'OBX, 483'."

The voice got closer and I quickly pulled off the waiter apron and hat. Troian then came and grabbed me by the arm and pulled me away "Oh just wait till Archer knows that you pulled this."

~~~~~~

Brushing my teeth I spit leftover toothpaste into the sink then running the faucet for a few seconds. I tucked a piece of hair behind my ear.

Walking out of the bathroom and into the bedroom I grabbed extra pillows and put them in the middle of the full sized bed. James walked out shirtless and only in sweatpants "Seriously? A pillow wall?"

A memory of Ryker and I at the drive in movie hit me from when I built a pillow wall and he teased me about it. "I don't trust you" I muttered under my breath then sitting on the edge of the bed and throwing my hair up into a quick ponytail with a few lose strands. James laid down and turned off the lights as I laid down on my side.

A few minutes went by of complete silence and still movement. I wasn't going to fall asleep anytime soon with this chain around my ankle that was tighter then normal.

A pair of arms wrapped around me and grabbed me by the waist. I flinched and James rolled me over so I was ontop of him. I went to smack him but he grabbed both my wrist in his hands. "Let me go" I gritted, getting angry.

"Rain, come on." James continued "It's not like you have a boyfriend anymore." I glared at him then giving the biggest fake smile ever "You're right. Maybe we should just-..." I started to trail off.

I leaned closer in and his eyes flickered to my lips. Leaning closer, I brushed my lips against his and felt his mint breath on my lips.

I then bit my lip and quickly pulled my wrist out of his grip once he became distracted and grip loosened on me. He grabbed me by my wrist again and pinned me down against the matress so my back was up against and he was above me.

"James stop" I begged and his eyes were dark with glare and his face was ice cold and emotionless. I couldn't read him, and his grip tightened on me. Tears started to prick my eyes and I tried to move but the chain pulled on me.

It pinched my skin making me flinch in pain and I just wanted all of this to be over. "You're turning into Tyson, you're turning into everyone else here" I whispered and James stared at me with intensity in his eyes.

"Then I guess I have to full fill my actions" He muttered, leaning in and pressing his lips to mine. A single tear escaped my eye and traveled down my cheek. His hands snaked around me and his hand grabbed my ass.
~~~~~~

This wasn't James..

I knew it wasn't him. He was being forced to do this to me so that I would break and I would become easier to target, but this..this wasn't the James I knew.

* * * * * *

My eyes flickered open and I looked up to see James peacefully sleeping. His arms were wrapped around me, we were chest to chest, our legs were tangled together and the blanket covered over the both of us.

James then woken up and blinked a few times. "Hey" He whispered, and I pulled out of his grip and got up from the bed. "Hey" I whispered once I stood up.

The door opened and Hayes walked in. "Rain" He beckoned me over and I walked over to him then out of the room. He shut the door and pulled me down the hall.

"Look, I know what hell you've been through." He sighed "I'm gonna help you." I blinked shocked, and he pulled a phone out of his pocket "Call someone you know, tell them where they are and they can come get you."

I was in complete shock and I didn't expect this. "W-what?" I stuttered confused as to why Hayes was doing this. "Listen, I know your story. Your parents are divorced, you're abused at home, you were basically raped, and now lost your boyfriend" He listed.

"My parents got dvorced when I was 15; my dad stabbed my mom from being drunk, my dad was abusive, some girl blackmailed me into sex when I was in High School, and the love of my life was shot and killed in front of my eyes" He explained, closing his eyes a second before reopening them "I know what you're going through, and no one should have to go through this. Now, I want to get you home back to your gang so just call someone."

"Hayes...I'm so sorry" I whispered feeling bad about what he's been through. "Things happen" He shrugged "It's painful at the time but you grow from it."

I nodded slightly then throwing my arms around him and hugging him tightly. He froze for a second before hugging me back "I'll do everything I can to prevent Zeke or Archer doing anything till your gang comes. Now go, I'll guard the door for you."

"Thank you" I grinned then walking into one of the bedrooms and shutting the doors. I quickly dialed Ryker's number, then froze before hitting the call button.

I bit my lip and took a deep breath. I deleted the numbers then dialing Craig's so that it wouldn't be awkward. It rung a couple times before a voice answered "Hello?"

"Craig! It's me Rain!" I said "Hayes gave me hod phone to call you."

"Rain! Where are you?!" Craig asked and I heard a bunch of voices yell "What?!" in the background.

"I'm off the Outer Banks. It's a warehouse, the area code is 483. It's on some backroad; you can't miss it" I explained.

"Ryker's dream was right...." He whispered, but I still hear. I furrowed my eyebrows together even though he couldn't see "What?"

"He dreamt that you were in a warehouse and there was 483 written on a wall or something" Craig continued to whisper.

He was silent for fora few moments before exclaiming "OH MY GOD! Rain, don't get shot! We're on our way!" Then the call ended.

'Don't get shot'..great adivce, thanks Craig.

I walked out of the room and handed Hayes his phone "Thank you so much" I breathed.

* * * * * * *

<^> Ryker Anderson POV <^>

Putting the cigarette between my lips and lighting it, I leaned up against the motorcycle I stole and waited for it to fill with gas.

"You promised Rain you wouldn't smoke anymore" Leah's voice sighed as she came up. Rolling my eyes at her "I don't think she really cares anymore."

"Ryk..she cares about you" Leah narrowed her eyes at me as she crossed her arms. I rolled my eyes again "Well it doesn't seem like it."

Something fell and crashed into the ground. I looked up to see where it came from but couldn't figure it out. I picked up what fell and saw it was a CD in a case with a note taped on to it that said "Watch these."

I looked at Leah and she looked up at me. "Don't" She shook her head, but I opened the passenger seat to the Skyline and got a laptop out, that Andre and Luca were using for tracking.

Everyone came over, flooding around the laptop. I placed the CD in the slot and waited for it to start. It came up to someone yelling "RAIN! RAIN!" repeatedly, and the camera showed her as she ran down hallways from being chased.

She was then grabbed and pinned up against a wall. "Smile, it's going to your gang" The guy behind the camera snickered. She was beaten up badly, black eye, busted lip, and tears stained we cheeks.

The guys snickered and one pulled out a knife and dug it into her neck. She flinched in pain, squeezing her eyes shut. "Rain, enlighten us on what you think about Anderson?"

"Let me go!" She shouted as she struggled in the two guys grip. "Now, now, Rain. Answer the question, and will let you go." "I think that he's a liar" She managed to get out and the guys all laughed then dropping her.

She fell to the ground and clutched her neck where they cut her. My heart fell at seeing her like this, and I wanted to jump through the screen and beat the shit out of these guys.

The clip then ended and went to another one. I tensed up and saw it was Rain kissing some guy. He pinned her up against the wall before carrying her over to the bed.

My eyes went wide and I clutched my fist. Then the video went a bunch of moments of them kissing before ending. I slammed the laptop shut and shoved past everyone.

"Ryker! Ryker! Ryker wait!" Alessandra yelled after me and I walked up to the motorcycle. "Ryker! Would you just wait!"

"What Ally?!" I yelled, turning around to face her. "You need to relax. They were probably forcing her into doing that. Ryk that's not her and you know it isn't. They want you to react like this and you're giving them what they want!"

"Oh just shut the fuck up! Why does everyone keep telling me to relax! Relax?! Does anyone realize what's going on?!" I shouted at her, and she yelled back "Don't yell at me! I'm not the one doing any of this!"

I grabbed her and cupped her face in my hands then smashing my lips into hers. She froze and I heard gasp from the gang. Alessandra pulled back and stared at me in shock.

"I shouldn't have done that." I whispered in regret and Alessandra nodded in agreement. "You did it out of jealousy. Ryk, this is what I mean about you have to relax. You can't go around doing this."

"Oh, but Rain can?!" I snapped angrily that she was with that asshole bastard. Liz sighed as she came up "Remember when Chloe came.."

I tensed up and clenched my jaw at the sound of her name. "You guys were all lovey-dovey and Rain was completely jealous. She had to sit there and watch you and Chloe, not to mention you were sending Rain mixed signals because you were odd your meds at the time."

"And your point?" I asked annoyed. "The point is; how do you think Rain felt? To see a guy she liked making out with some other girl?" Liz narrowed her eyes at me.

"God damn it Liz!" I continued to mutter under my breath "I hate it when you're right."

She still hear and a smirk danced onto her lips "So does my brother." "No-..Well..yeah.." Neil started.

"Alright" Dawson clapped his hands together "Let's go get Rain."

# Chapter 18

<^> Rain Thompson POV <^>

"Get up" Shay gritted and Mark kicked me in the side. I flinched in pain and forced myself to sit up. The guys found out about Hayes lending me his phone and aren't happy about it.

"Why don't we just get this done and over with?" Joe said as he loaded his gun with a mag full of bullets. He came up to me and pressed the gun up to the side of my head and I tensed up.

"No" Tyson cut in with a tern voice and my eyes snapped to his "It's not time. We have to make Anderson suffer by keeping her away from him as long as possible, because if we shoot her he'll give up hope and stop searching."

I swallowed a lump in my throat and Joe took the gun away from my head and put the gun in a holster. Hayes was locked somewhere and James wasn't allowed to say anything to try and stop them hurting me or he'd be killed.

"I say you just shoot the bitch" Troian spoke as she examined her nails and sat on James's lap. "Get up" Logan ordered as he grabbed me by the arm and forcefully pulled me up off the gross cement floor.

I was a mess with a black eye, busted lip, stains of blood on my skin, my clothes were torn, I was bruised all over my body, chain marks were imprinted into my wrist and ankles, cuts were marked into my skin from blades of knives.

The doors opened to Zeke and Archer walking in with Axel following behind them. "Show her" Zeke ordered Axel as he crossed his arms.

Axel slid a laptop in front of me and opened it up "Hit play." I looked up at him and blinked slowly as everyone watched me. I moved the cursor and hit play.

It opened up to a video of some gas station and I saw Ryker and Alessandra talking. I bit my lip confused, and didn't understand why they were showing this to me.

Ryker then grabbed Alessandra and smashed his lips into hers. My heart stopped and I put a hand over my mouth as tears pricked my eyes. I shut the laptop and was in complete shock.

"This what your so-called-loving-ex-boyfriend has been doing while you're gone." Zeke said with a smirk and his arms crossed. "See, Rain. I went to the gas station" Gunner spoke up as he approached closer to me.

"I saw everything. All the 'worry' is just a cover up. He doesn't care about you, he just wants you to think that he does while he bangs other girls. I've been following him, and he's been going to clubs and bars making out, grinding, buying drinks for a bunch of different girls a night."

"You're lying!" I yelled, not wanting to believe it was true. Tears started to escape my eyes and he shook his head "I'm not lying, Rain. How could I lie? There's proof.. I just figure'd you should know."

I looked down at the ground and covered my mouth with my hand so I wouldn't break out into tears. Taylor and Felicity came up, sitting down next to me. Felicity pulled me into a hug and Taylor rubbed circles on my back.

"I can't believe he would do this" I whispered to myself as tears ran down my cheeks and I cried silently. "Rain, I'm so sorry" Felicity sighed.

~~~~~

Staring out the window as the drips of water ran down the glass on the outside. When I was little I would always watch the water droplets race down the window to see which one would make it to the bottom first.

Sometimes I wish I could go back to then, back to when my parents were stolen together, back when my dad actually liked me, back when I wasn't ever caught up in this gang stuff.

If I would have never jumped out of that corner when the guy had a gun and Ryker was in the hallway, I wouldn't be here right now.

I looked down at my lap and blinked a few times, parting my lips. I debated if my self conscious was right or not.

Running a hand through my hair, the door bursted open; making my head snap up to see. Joe and Cato barged in, grabbing my arms and pulling me up.

"You're in deep shit, Thompson" Cato gritted, as they dragged me down the hallway. I kept my mouth shut and pressed my lips in a thin line, not wanting to ask what I did.

Once we hit the main room, the guys pushed me and locked all windows and doors around. "What the hell is this?!" Zeke yelled shoving a video of Shaliene and I talking in the restaurant and giving her information about the building.

He chucked the phone at the wall, and grabbed me by the jaw as he glared at me intensely "I don't want to play these games anymore, Thompson. I'm done with you!"

He slammed me up against a wall and I smacked my head against it which made me flinch in pain. He pulled the hand gun out of the holster of his jeans and put it up to my head.

A bullet was in the Chamber and I swallowed a lump in my throat. He wrapped his finger around the trigger, and glared at me with intensity. If glares could kill, I'd be dead and stabbed 268 times by now.

"Ezekiel!" A voice yelled stern and Zeke was pushed away from me. Tyson and James pushed him up against a wall and Hayes sent a punch flying to his jaw.
~~~~~

I stared shocked that they jumped in and stopped Zeke; who had a gun. Tyson gritted in warning tone "Don't. There's more ways we can handle this."

Hayes took the gun from Zeke and unloaded the magazine from it and pushed all the bullets out onto a table. Zeke's lip was busted and he was sure to have a black eye.

"Put her in the black room" Zeke ordered. Mark and Zac grabbed me by the arms and pulled me out of the room, away from everyone.

Being dragged down the hallways of the warehouse, we came to an end and Zac opened the door with one of the keys on the key ring.

Mark pushed me in and the door slammed shut behind me before they locked it, so I couldn't get out. The rook was small and completely black; so I couldn't see anything.

* * * * * * *

<^> Ryker Anderson POV <^>

My eyes flung open, and my head had a massive sharping pain. I clutched my head, and day up to be in a not familiar room.

"Fuck" I muttered, under my breath as I rubbed my temples because I had a killer hangover. I then heard humming from the other side of the room, and my eyes snapped over to where a bathroom door was.

The shower was running, and I looked down to see I was completely naked. My eyes went wide "No, I did not," as I got up and pulled on my clothes that were on the floor.

I searched for my phone and couldn't find it, when the shower turned off and humming stopped. My heart was racing and guilt came over me, because I couldn't exactly remember what I did after getting drunk off my ass last night.

The bathroom door then opened. "Oh, Ryker..you're awake" She said, tightening the white towel around her. I gripped my hair in my hands throwing my head back and cursing under my breath.

"Please don't tell me we did anything" I said feeling the guilt poor down on me. "Define 'anything'." She bit her lip, raising an eyebrow at me.

"We didn't have sex last night, right?" I questioned. She stood up straight and tensed up, keeping a serious face.

"Right?!" I yelled, and she looked at me with her eyes boring into mine. "Ryker.." She sighed, and I rubbed my face "Oh my God, Rain is going to fucking hate me."

She then walked up to me and grabbed my wrist in her hands, with a smile on her face. "Why are you smiling?! This wasn't suppose to happen!"

Alessandra shook her head, smiling before laughing "Oh My God, Ryker. You actually think we'd have sex? I'm your best friend for Christ sakes."

I stared dumbfounded at Alessandra as she laughed. "Not funny Ally, you actually made me think we did" I muttered, glaring at her. "Oh my God! Ryk! Even when you're drunk you wouldn't let any girl flirt with you!" She exclaimed.

"We were at the bar last night because Craig and Dawson thought it'd be good to grab a drink before doing a huge drive today. You got wasted and you still wouldn't let any girl get your phone number, because you said you had a girlfriend" Ally explained.

I grabbed a bag that was thrown up against a wall and zipped it up with my back towards her "Yeah, well I don't anymore" I muttered, throwing the backpack full of bullets over my shoulder.

"She'll take you back Ryk" She sighed wholeheartedly "She'd be an idiot if she didn't..I mean besides the whole point of you lying to her about being Bipolar, a drug dealer, living in foster care-"

"Why are you in here?" I snapped at Alessandra, not wanting to here everything I did wrong again. "Shower in my rooms broken, and you were asleep so I just showered here" She shrugged.

Alessandra started to walk towards the door but then stopped and turned around to face me "Ryker."

"What?" I asked, organizing a bunch of bullets for the guns into the backpack. "You got undressed last night and I accidentally walked in..but nice ass" She teased, sending me a wink.

"Out" I demanded, pointing to the door. She chuckled before walking out and shutting the door of the hotel room behind her.

I grabbed the backpacks, and the rest of my stuff before leaving the hotel room and heading outside to the parking lot where half the gang was.

I shoved the backpacks in the back of a trunk of a Ferrari, and Craig came up to me "We have someone I'd like you to meet."

I looked at him and already knew this was going to be bad. He beckoned me to follow and I followed him over to where the gang was standing by some of the cars.

"Officer" Craig spoke up, and a guy with jet black hair and black eyes looked up and stopped talking. He walked over and clenched his jaw "You must be Ryker Anderson."

"No, I'm not dealing with this shit" I gritted then shoving Craig "He's a fucking cop, asshole!"

"A cop that will help us" Craig gritted "He was a army sergeant and martial arts tranior. He knows how to take these kind of people down." I looked at the cop with a glare and he put his hand out.

"I'm Ian Knoxk" He introduced, I hesitantly shook his hand "I've been in contact with the police Department from New York and came in contact Rain's father."

"Search warrants have been sent out along the east coast" He informed "Do you remember what Rain was wearing last?"

Rolling my eyes at this guy "I don't know it was weeks ago, but it was probably a white t-shirt, jeans, a leather jacket, and Converses."

He nodded slightly "And you're the drug dealer?" I clutched my fist and glared at this guy about to jump him when Aaron and Reece held me back.

"I'll take that as yes" Ian said, clenching his jaw "I'd like you to meet someone." He paused for a minute before yelling "Natalie!"

A girl with brown hair and green eyes in tight clothing walked out with a handgun at her side. They guys all looked at each other then at the girl.

"Hey, I'm Will" Will smiled, walking up to her. Vince then came in and body-checked him out of the way "Baker, Vince Baker."

"Move out of the way Baker, I'm way better looking" Andre declared, then offering Natalie a smirk. All the guys hit in her, and after a few moments she looked back at me.

"You're not going to hit on me?" She asked, raising an eyebrow. "Your not my type" I muttered under my breath.

"Oh really?" She asked, swinging the gun around her finger "I expected a Bad Boy to go for a Bad Girl."

I already hated her within the 10 seconds or meeting her. I rolled my eyes, walking away over to the Skyline.

Everyone besides the cop, Craig, Dawson, and Levi stayed back to talk about what was going to go down, as everyone else followed behind me because of Natalie.

I grabbed a glock 32 out of the car and slapped a mag full of bullets in. "His type is Rain Eliza Thompson" Peter snickered, and Will did as well.

"Wait..you're girlfriends the one that got kidnapped?" Natalie asked. "Ex girlfriend" I corrected, loading the gun with a bullet in the chamber.

She breathed a small laugh "Wow, priceless. You got your 'ex girlfriend', kidnapped by one of the most wanted gangs and it's all because of you...Boyfriend of the year award sure does go to you."

Sending her a glare, "Listen, I don't need to here some slut tell me what I did wrong in my life. So I suggest shutting the hell up before I put a bullet through your head-"

"Ryker Xavier!" Leah cut me off, sending me a glare "Watch it." Her face then went pale, eyes widened, and she placed a hand on her stomach.

"I need to use the bathroom" She mumbled quickly, grabbing Liz's hand, and pulling her away. "What's wrong with her?" Val asked.

"She looked like she was about to puke" Felix stated. "Morning sickness?" Celeste questioned.

My head snapped towards her "Leah is not pregnant." Juliet and Celeste looked at each other then me. "Uh..Ryker..have you not notice? Her diet changed, a bit of weight gain, morning sickness.." Juliet listed.

"Plus the most noticeable thing is, her boobs got bigger" Alessandra added "How'd you not notice?"

"Maybe because I don't stare at my sisters boobs" I said in a duh tone. "Yeah, he's got Rain to stare at" Neil smirked, and I smacked him upside the head.

"No but seriously" Reece popped in "Our sister is not pregnant. She isn't even fucking anyone." "We don't know anything" The girls said, putting their hands up in surrender "But those are our guesses."

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

"So this Rain girl..." Natalie trailed off "Was she born during a thunderstorm?"

I sent her her a glare through the rear-view mirror "We're you named after a stripper?" Natalie scoffed "At least my names normal."

Vince was driving because apparently you had to be 25 to drive a rental car here. Vince was driving, Natalie, Alessandra, Liz, and Reece were in the back and I was in the passenger seat.

"So is she like your girlfriend or long time fuck?" Natalie asked. "Why don't you just shut the hell up?" I snapped at her.

"Just want to know what I'm dealing with." She said, blowing a bubble of gum before it popped.

* * * * * *

<^> Rain Thompson POV <^>

I kicked Austin in the gut; sending him backwards. Lance came towards me and I grabbed him by his forearm and put in a twist behind his back, kneeling him in the balls.

He dropped to the ground in pain, groaning and clutching..that area. Arthur then went to throw a punch at me, but I quickly ducked and kicked him in the shin; causing him to fall.

"You think that just because you took down my guys that you'll make it out alive?" A voice called through the silence. I whirled around to see only eyes glowing in the darkness of the doorway.

"Tsk, tsk, Rain...I've got to give you props, you sure are a dreamer" He tsked, then stepping out of the darkness. Archer's smirk grew wider "But there's enough time for dreaming when you're dead."

Archer snapped his fingers, ordering Cato and Gunner to walk up and grab hold of my arms. "Tie her down, I'm tired of her moving around." Archer stated, glaring at me.

I was taken out of the room and dragged down the halls and my bare feet walked on the gross cement floor. They stopped when they came to a door and knocked.

"Landlock!" Gunner yelled, pounding on the door. The door swung open to James who was shirtless and only in jeans "She's coming in here, boss doesn't want any funny business."

James clenched his jaw, looking at me. Cato pulled me into room; past James and pushed me down onto the bed. He chained one of my ankles and one of my wrist.

I sat on the mattress and Cato snapped the chain on my skin; making me flinch in pain. Cato and Gunner walked out, slamming the door behind them.

James looked back at me "Don't touch anything" He ordered before walking over to his desk and sitting down on the wooden chair to go through papers.

~ ~ ~ ~

I walked my fingers on the window ledge, humming to myself of some Melody in my head. "You still play?" James asked from the other side of the room.

"Huh?" I asked, looking back at him. "Piano..you still play?" He asked, and I furrowed my eyebrows at him "How'd you know I play piano?"

He breathed a small laugh "I've liked you since we were friends, I know more about you then you think." Pressing my lips in a tight, I shifted uncomfortably. "That and you have a piano in almost every room of your house."

"Right.." I trailed off, looking back out the window. "Your dad still abusive?" James asked, and my head snapped back around to him.

"What is this 20?" I snapped. "Maybe" He shrugged, leaning back on the wooden chair. "Then I get a turn." I stated.

"How do I get out of here?" I asked for my question. "You know I can't tell you" James said, twirling the pencil through his fingers.

"Whatever." I muttered annoyed, rolling my eyes. "Ask me a real question" James said, standing up from his chair getting on the bed next to me.

It was raining outside in a thunderstorm, with lightning strikes in the purple sky. "Fine. You still write?" I asked curiously.

He nodded slightly "Somewhat. Still not anything published..especially with Troian; she thinks guys that write are petty."

"They are not!" I defended "Why do you even listen to her?" "Not your turn" James stated, narrowing his eyes at me.

"So How'd you get yourself caught up in this gang stuff? You never seemed like the violent kind of girl.." James asked.

"I fell for Ryker Anderson, that's how" I answered. "Mind expanding on that?" James asked, raising an eyebrow at me.

I sighed "It's pretty cliché. But I was at school one night after hours because typical me forgot a textbook I needed to finish a paper and Google wasn't going to cut it, so my one teacher left a key for me. So I went and I walked down one of the hallways when I heard people. I looked to see some guy with a gun, and another who had the gun pointed at him. The guy was about to shoot when I quickly jumped out from the corner and stopped the men. I grabbed a gun and pulled the trigger; giving us time to run and hide in the locker rooms. After that I just kept running into Ryker and the rest of the gang."

I took a breath "Ryker and I actually hated each other with burning passion, to the point where he would just call me 'Thompson-'." I stifled a small laugh under my breath, shifting in my spot.

"Really?" James asked shocked. "Oh yeah" I nodded "We were always fighting and bickering over everything, but through all the Bad Boy attitude; he was there for me when no one else was."

"Wow..I expected you two to be close at the very start by the way you talk about him." James said, and I stared out the window. "Yeah..but I guess I just have to forget about it; we're not together anymore" I shrugged, looking at James.

He didn't say anything, and his eyes flickered to my lips. I tensed up, blinking slowly. He started to lean in closer and closer, with his lips Brushing against mine.

I closed the space between us, by pressing my lips to his. He cupped my cheek with his hand, moving closer to me and his lips moving in sync with mine.

Then a buzzing noise went off, making us both pull away. There was a light on the wall of the room that was flashing red and making a buzzing.

"What's that?" I asked quietly. James eyes were wide, and he said "Your gang is coming."

# Chapter 19

I closed the space between us, by

pressing my lips to his. He cupped my cheek with his hand, moving closer to me and his lips moving in sync with mine.

Then a buzzing noise went off, making us both pull away. There was a light on the wall of the room that was flashing red and making a buzzing.

"What's that?" I asked quietly. James eyes were wide, and he said "Your gang is coming." My eyes widened, and the door bursted open.

Zeke came in and ordered "Let's go." I sat there with a smirk on my face, and Zeke yelled "Why are you smirking?!"

"Because you're about to get your ass whooped" I stated, and he glared at me. "We're switching to the glass from, let's go." Zeke commanded, and snapped his fingers at James.

James undid the chains around my ankles and wrist, before taking my hand and pulling me down the hall where everyone was running around trying to prepare.

We came up to Hayes, and he nodded "They got my messgae." "You did this?" I asked. Hayes nodded sternly "But you need to follow James for now, and everything will work out."

James started pulling me down the hall, and I called after Hayes "Thank you!"

<^> Ryker Anderson POV <^>

~ Earlier that day ~

"God I hate this..." I muttered under my breath, putting bullets into a mag. "It'll be worth it." Ally gave a reassuring smile.

"Fucking better be." I said, slapping the magazine in the gun, loading loading a bullet into the chamber.

There were cops with us and they were supposedly suppose to help us, but I didn't buy it. Cops are cops, and they're assholes when they abuse authority; just like Sheriff daughter.

"I know what you're thinking." Ally spoke up, loading bullets into her revolver "And not all cops are assholes, Ryker." I rolled my eyes at her "Most of them are. You're lucky you haven't met Sheriff Thompson."

"Rain's dad?" She asked and I nodded. "Yeah, One time when I was in jail when I was 15 and Sheriff Thompson was the one Watching me, and I just remember thinking 'God, I'd hate to be his kids'." I explained, loading more bullets into other guns.

"Hey, watch it; that's your future father in law" Ally smacked my arm, with a small chuckle. "Over my dead body." I muttered, and Ally smirked holding up a gun "That can be arranged."

I took the gun from her "Don't even think about it, Alessandra Monica." She rolled her blue eyes at me, and asked "So what do you think of Natalie?"

"I think she can go fall of a cliff..I'll be happy to push her too, if she needs moral support" I stated. "Ryker Xavier!" She scoffed.

My phone starting buzzing and I quickly pulled it out and saw it was an unknown number. Alessandra raised an eyebrow and I shrugged, answering it.

"Hello?" I answered, not knowing who it was.

"Anderson?" A voice questioned, and Ally furrowed her eyebrows together. "Who is this?" I asked, because I didn't recognize the voice.

"Hayes, I work for Zeke Monroe" He introduced. I clenched my jaw, not knowing what this guy was going to say.

"I can tell you where Rain is" He said, and I stood up straight. Ally heard and her eyes went wide.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

"Put it on." Officer Knox ordered, shoving the bullet proof vest into my chest. I sent him a glare and he held it in his gaze.

"I don't know how you were brought up as kid, but you're an adult now. So start acting like it, Anderson." He gritted before yelling "Natalie!"

Natalie came over and her and her father exchanged looks before he walked away. "Asshole." I muttered under my breath.

"Look, my dad's helping you find this Rain girl, so I suggest you shape up and listen." Natalie crossed her arms. Clenching my jaw "Now I understand where you being a bitch comes from...daughter like father."

Natalie sent me a glare in return "Don't screw this up, Ryker or you're in deep shit." "I already past deep shit back in Italy." I retorted.

"Maybe if you didn't lie about your so-called-ex-girlfriend wouldn't be in this situation, right now" Natalie pushed. "I did it to protect her" I gritted, wanting nothing more then to punch this bitch but I vowed never to hit a girl.

"Protect her from the real you?" Natalie questioned, crossing her arms. I stayed silent and just glared at her.

"I know about Rain Thompson, and she was that perfect rich girl that seemed to have it all; besides her parents and all, but you didn't want her to think you were screwed up in the head because of what you've been through." Natalie stated "I may seem like a bitch, but I tell it like it is."

I glanced up from the gun I was currently loading up to her "I really wish your parents used a condom." I said honestly, slapping the mag into the gun.

Earning a glare from her, she rested her hands on her hips "Do the world a favor and never have kids, because of you say stuff like that...well let's just say they'd end up just like you, foster kid."

<^> Rain Thompson POV <^>

I was being dragged down the hallway and was transferred off to Blade and Derrick. They came up to a dead end, and Blade put his hand up to the wall and a control panel suddenly lit up.

My eyes widened and I blinked slowly. He typed in a passcode, before the wall opened and Derrick dragged me in, which led to a huge room that was probably the length of the building.

Pressing my lips in thin line, I was pushed down into a wooden chair only for my hands to be tied behind my back.

I saw James come in and I instantly regretted kissing him earlier. I wasn't thinking straight and was very impulsive at the moment.

"I set trackers and fire markers everywhere." Logan and Axel stated, walking into the room as well. Trackers were small devices, that if you touched they attached to you and then whoever controlled it, could track the person. Fire markers are basically small bombs that they created, and if you stepped on it; it would trigger and blow up.

"Get a marking on Anderson, he's the target." Archer ordered Christopher and Shay. Tyson came up to me and chained my ankle again, making me flinch at how tight it was.

"Such a shame.." He sighed, standing up "If you would've went with the right guy you wouldn't be on the bridge of your death." I swallowed a lump in my throat, not saying anything that would make this situation worse.

"They have others!" Cato yelled, coming into the room with a loaded rifle in his hand. "What do you mean others?" Zeke questioned.

"I mean, there's like a whole army of them out there!" Cato exclaimed. I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion as to else would be out there.

Zeke ran over to the window hurriedly "There's cops." "It's a SWAT team." Eve muttered, under her breath; glancing back at me.

Benson ran over to a wall and slapped a button down, making alarms go off through out the building. I never realized how intact amd prepared they were and I just thought it was a normal old abandoned warehouse.

I then started to fidget with the rope that tied my wrist, and I tried untying it. Glancing back over my shoulder as much as I could, I tried to figure out where the not began.

"Come on." I whispered to myself, but then I felt a hand grabbed mine and push down on my pressure point in my wrist. "Ow, ow." I whispered, and looked up to see Tyson.

"Don't even try it, babe." He warned. "Don't babe me." I snapped, and he pulled a gun out, putting it up to my head "I can make you call me daddy if I really wanted to, so don't test me, Babe."

Sending him a glare, I bit my tongue so I wouldn't say anything that could get me killed or I would've told him to go burn in hell.

<^> Ryker Anderson POV <^>

Once we pulled up to the building, everyone pulled out their firearms and I personally chose a pistol; glock 42 because it was am easy carry-around and had a thick bullet so you weren't as likely to miss..not that I miss.

"Still a bulls-eye hitter?" Ally's voice asked as she came up to stand next to me. My lips tugged up into a smirk "Once a bulls-eye hitter, always a bulls-eye hitter." I lifted then gun up, and pointed it out as I kept my eyes on Ally.

Pulling the trigger, I kept the gun gripped tightly in my one hand because it had somewhat of a kick. I heard the brass fall to the paved ground and I looked to where I shot; which was a old street sign.

I smirked cockily because I hit right in the middle. "I could still kick your ass." Ally scoffed, pulling up her A.R. 15, and slapping a magazine full of bullets into it.

"Alright!" Officer Knox called over everybody and my eyes snapped over to him. "We are going to split up into groups, every group will have walkie talkie to communicate."

"Groups are: Craig, Leah, Will, Peter, and Liz. Dawson, Luca, Andre, Neil, and Juliet. Seb, Val, Aaron, Abe, Celeste, and me. Levi, Reece, Augustus, Memphis, and Felix. Vince, Alesandra, Tate, and Ryker also Natalie." Officer Knox ordered, and I groaned at the sound of Natalie's name.

Natalie sent me a cold glare and Officer Knox walked up to me "What was that Anderson?" I gave him a bored look "With all due respect, your daughters a bitch."

"Ryker." Craig warned, and I clenched my jaw. "Head out." Dawson yelled, and we all started to run separate ways.

"What's the plan?" Vince asked me as he was right beside them. "Shooting all those assholes in the head." I stated. We came to the warehouse and we all climbed through the window.

I heard gun shots already and I looked down the long corridor hallways. "What way do you think we should take?" Tate questioned.

"Left." "Right." Natalie and I both said at the same time, before glaring at each other. "Left, I'm the one that knows her best." I gritted.

"Right is more practical, plus it doesn't matter who knows her best." Natalie gritted. "Well I say left." I argued.

"Well I say right." She fought back stubbornly. "Ok, as the oldest; I'm deciding. We'll go straight." Vince cut in, and we followed him down the cement hallway.

"Should've went right." Natalie said in a sing-song voice. "Should've shot you in the head." I mimcked in a sing-song, and Alessandra smacked my arm.

I looked ahead, and squinted my eyes as I saw something with a small red flashing light reflecting. Natalie sent to step, but I quickly pulled her back.

"There's a bombs all over the place." I stated "Its a trap." "Is not." Natalie rolled her eyes. "Oh really?" I tested then picking up a stone and throwing it at the end of the hall; making a small bomb explode up in flames.

I narrowed my eyes at Natalie "Still want to go that way?" "They're everywhere." Tate said, looking for a route.

"The air vents?" Ally asked, looking up. "To risky. There's probably trackers in there." Vince stated. "Well let's just go back another way." Ally said, starting to turn around but a thing of fire markers dropped down from the ceiling.

"We're screwed." Tate sighed. I put the glock I had in the holster, then walking forward. "Ryker, where are you going?" Vince asked, and I clenched my jaw "We have to get last it somehow."

I stated down at the ground and looked for the red lights, but they were so small you could barely see them. I took a step carefully in spades that were between the markers.

"Ryk, be careful." Alessandra breathed in a sharp breath from behind me. I took another step and accidentally stltepped on one of the markers.

I quickly moved to the wall and it burned some of me. "Shit!" I muttered. "You good?" Vince asked, and I nodded stern. I looked up, and saw a pipe before jumping up and grabbing it.

Sliding my hands down, I moved over to the other side as fast as I could and went over all the markers. Once I made it to the other side, I let go of the pipe and landed on my feet.

"Okay, great. Now what about the rest of us?" Natalie questioned. "We're all going to have climb over." Vince shrugged, walking over and grabbing the pipe.

Natalie's eyes went wide, and Alessandra reassured her "Don't worry. Its just like monkey bar on the playground when we were kids...except this is over bombs, we're in a warehouse trying to solve a kidnapping, and we're 20...but you get the point."

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

"Move! Move! Move!" Vince yelled, and I pulled the trigger repeadtly at the guy that was only a foot away from me. He eventually fell to the ground and I kept the gun out as we ran down the halls.

We ran into more men, and all had to take one down. One guy came up to me and sent a punch to my jaw. I quickly punched him in the gut and shoved him back up to wall and, punched him in the jaw, making it unset.

I grabbed a knife and dug the blade into his neck "Tell me where Rain Thompson is." I gritted. A smirk was on his face, as blood ran down it "On the bridge of her death."

His eyes then went to something behind me, and right when I turned around, I got punched in the side of my face, and kneed in the gut.

The guy took a blade out and stabbed it into my side. I feel to the ground, groaning in pain, And gripping the knife that was in my side. Alessandra quickly jumped onto the guys back and wrapped her arms around his neck, completing the triangle choke.

The guy gripped her arms as he tried to pry them off his neck. Natalie stuck a knife in his gut and he fell to the ground. After taking the minions that were in this hall, the group came up to me.

I slowly started to pull the life out and breathed in a sharp breath, hissing in pain "Aha." I dropped the knife on the ground, clutching my side as blood seemed to pout out.

"Quickly, I have a a bandage in my backpack." Natalie said, and Tate dug through it. "Take your shirt off." Natalie ordered, pulling a box out of her backpack. "What?" I asked.

"Dont argue with me, Anderson. Just take it off." She said, opening the box. I slowly pulled off my shirt as much as I could without flinching in complete pain.

Natalie then exaimdd were I was stabbed in the side "Its deep." "No fucking shit, thank you for your share of obvious thoughts." I snapped sarcastically.

Natalie ignore my comment, taking a wrap of cloth out. "You have to wrap this around your side." "No, I'm not-" I fought, but was cut off "Listen, you could get it infected if something touches it, And I don't think you want that."

~ ~ ~ ~

It's been two hours, and we still haven't found Rain. We've been uo and down hallways, not knowing where we are going.

"I'm hungry." Alessandra pouted. "Oh, well let's just stop at a vending machine or ask someone for some yogurt?" Vince offered sarcastically.

Ally sent him a glare "I'm not in the mood for yogurt." I heard footsteps and we all froze, getting our guns ready. Then a group of people turned the corner.

"Hold!" A voice yelled, and I saw Craig, Leah, Liz, Will, and Peter approach. "Any luck?" Liz asked, and Vince shook his head "No. You?"

"Nope." Peter sighed. I ran a hand through my hair, just wanting to find Rain already. Flashing lights went off throughout the hall and a beeping sound.

We all looked around, putting up out weapons, and I heard a yell which sounded like Rain. My eyes widened, and I quickly ran off towards the sound.

"Ryker, wait!" Leah yelled after me, but I ran down the hall and followed the yelling. I came to an end of a hallway and climbed up a ladder which led me up a roof.

The yelling then stopped and I turned around to see a familiar face, standing by a radio where the screams were coming from. He smirked "Ryker Anderson, I never properly got to introduce myself. I'm Tyson Blix; Rain's other Ex-Boyfriend."

I clutched my fist and immediately went to punch the guy but he caught my fist and tsked, before sending a punch into my face. I stumbled back a bit but stabilized myself.

I pushed him up against a brick wall that was on the other side of the roof and punched him repeatedly. He pushed me back into a staircase and I fell down it.

I got up and went back up to him. I sent him backwards and grabbed him by his shirt before throwing him into a window. The glass shattered, and he fell through.

I pulled the glock out and started to load a New Mag, but I was pushed back and the gun fell out of my hand. "I thought you learned your lesson at the drag race." I gritted, kneeing him.

We were on the edge of the building and we're 50ft up. "You should teach your girlfriend a lesson." He gritted, as he went to send a punch but I ducked.

I kicked him in the shin, making him loose his balance and fall off the side of the warehouse. I quickly grabbed the gun magazine, then loading a bullet into the chamber and looking over the edge of warehouse.

Tyson was hanging by his hands on a window ledge, and he looked up at me with a glare. Sirens then went off again, and I quickly ran back inside the warehouse.

<^> Rain Thompson POV <^>

"Come on, Come on." I whispered, trying to get the rope off. I was currently cutting through with a nail filer, Felicity had lent me. The rope was running against my skin, making it dig in.

Zeke and Archer were on laptops, running everything and tracking. I bit my lip, and dug the nail filer in further.

The rope gave out and fell off. I smirked proudly, and rubbed my wrist, before undoing the chains had still left on me.

Luckily know one was watching me at this current moment, so I got away with it. I stood up and quickly walked over to where Arthur and Austin were, blocking the door.

I sent a punch to Arthur first, and his eyes snapped to mine. He went to grab me by diving at me, but I quickly ducked and he dove into the ground. I put a foot on his back and went to finish him but I was thrown into a wall by Austin.

I hit the wall with hard contact and fell to the ground because..well gravity..

Looking up, Austin started to approach me. He grabbed me by my ripped shirt and pulled me up from the ground. Clutching my fist, I sent it flying into his gut.

Austin clutched his gut, bent over in pain and I jumped onto his back. I but a pressure point in his neck before he fell to the ground.

"Get her!" Zeke demanded, and I started to make a run for it towards the door. When I went to open the door it already opened and I saw James.

I sighed at how my plan just completely backfired.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

I gripped the ropes that had me tied down and kicked my legs at the board as I struggled to breath as water poured more and more on me.

Waterboarding is not fun...

"STOP!" I yelled, once they pulled the cloth away from my face and stopped pouring water on me. "Can't take the pain? Don't play the game." Archer gritted.

"Enough!" Hayes yelled, and I squeezed my eyes shut. "You don't tell me 'enough', it's enough when I say it's enough." Zeke gritted at Hayes.

The girls unstrapped me from the board and when I stood up, I fell to the ground and started to cough up all the water I inhaled.

"Boss!" Cato yelled, coming into the room. Archer looked at him and Cato smirked "We've captured them." Archer's lips turned up to an evil grin, and the door bursted open.

My eyes snapped up to see the whole gang being restrained and forced onto the other-side of the room. My eyes met Ryker's tired bright blue eyes and he whispered in shock "Rain."

Tears pricked my eyed and I didn't known how to feel right now. I was overjoyed yet depressed all at the same time.

My breath hitched, and it became unsteady. I was pulled up from the ground by James and Ty. "Well Well, welcome Crusades. We've been waiting for your arrival, right Rain?" Zeke smirked then looking back at me.

Glaring at him, I muttered "Go burn in hell." "What was that?" He tested, coming up to me and I pressed my lips in a thin line.

"Go burn in hell." I repeated stern, keeping the glare in my eyes. He smacked me across the face and grabbed me by the shirt "Watch what you say."

I saw Ryker struggling in Derrick's and Shay's grip. "I've decided to be nice today, and let you all witness the death of your members." Zeke projected.

"Derrick, Shay." Zeke ordered, snapping his fingers and they pushed Ryker up to where the red 'X' was painted on the ground in front of a wooden board.

They began to tie him down to the standing-up right board and his eyes bored into mine. I saw Tyson start loading the gun, and I gulped silently.

"STOP!" I yelled, making everyone's eyes go to me.

My lip was busted, I had a black eye, my body was sore, cuts and marks all over my body, and dry blood stained my skin and I hated being looked at when I was like this.

Ryker and I were in the same building. Same room. Breathing the same air. Yet we were so far apart.

I was fighting against Lance's grip that he had on me, but he dug his nails into my side "The more you struggle, the harder this is going to be."

I closed my eyes shut and sighed as I gave in "Alright...I'll do it..Just let him go, please."

Tyson smirked "Oh don't worry sweetheart."

"Rain, don't do this." Ryker breathed, as they untied him and pushed him away.

Ryker was beaten up worse then me where half his face was covered in blood he had a cut in the side of his head, and just beaten up horrible.

I tensed up and gulped as Tyson shoved me over to the standing plate. I fell, and hit the ground.

I placed my hands on the ground and kept my eyes down then coughing, and a liquid came out with my couch. I touched my lips, and took my fingers away to see it.

Blood.

"Rain!" Everyone shouted, and I ignored them. I avoided their looks which killed me even more.

"Get up." Tyson ordered then I stood up weakly by forcing myself. "RAIN!" They all continued to yell to get my attention.

"Let's go Thompson, we don't have all day." Tyson said impatiently. "Rain! Please don't do this!" Ryker pleaded.

I didn't look at him, and I tired to block out their screams, and their yells echoed through my ears.

I went to where the X was marked, and Tyson grabbed a 38 glock hand gun which could kill someone with one shot.

He picked up the loaded magazine then slapping it into the chamber of the gun, and smirked "Any last words?"

I pressed my lips in a thin line and shook my head slightly very slowly. He raised then gun, and I turned straight and faced the gang.

Ryker's eyes were beyond black and face was expressionless and ice cold to point where it was as white as a ghost.

I glanced and saw Tyson wrap his finger around the trigger; getting ready to pull it.

"Rain! Rain! No! Please!" Ryker yelled with his voice cracking in sadness.

I took one last deep breath, and I couldn't explain how I was feeling right now. "Rain! Please!" They all screamed. Tyson then went to pull the trigger but Ryker's yell stopped him.

"RAIN, I LOVE YOU!"

My head whipped to him, and eyes went wide, as my heart started to pick up again as butterflies erupted my stomach.

He got out of the guy's grip that he was in and ran up to me, and smashed his lips into mine as he cupped my face in his hands, and pulled me closer then I've ever been to him.

Which is saying a lot..

The kiss was passionate and hungry, and I pulled away for air. He pressed his forehead to mine as he rubbed his thumbs on my cheeks below my eyes that had bags under them.

Our breath was both heavy. "Rain, I love you, Please don't do this. Please. I won't be able to live with myself if you do this."

Tears were racing down my cheeks and I clasped my hands around each of his wrist.

"I love you." I whispered back, with my heart racing faster then it ever has and butterflies turning in my stomach as my cheeks flushed red.

He smiled with a small laugh but not very humoress, and I smiled slightly.

"Aww well isn't that sweet. You guys can be Romeo and Juliet, but in order for that you both have to die..so let's get this show on the road." Tyson interrupted.

Ryker quickly pushed me behind him protectively, and I saw Craig pull out of being restrained and he yelled "Run!" Then throwing something in the middle of the room.

It was one of those fire markers before I could see anyone else, Ryker grabbed my hand and pulled me out of the room.

# Chapter 20

Ryker pulled me down the back staircase that spiraled down to the sewer, but there was an exit door down, there. The stairs were narrow, and if you slipped there was no going back.

I heard gun shots up above and couldn't help but worry about the rest of the gang. Ryker then stopped dead in his track, making me stop as well.

I saw that there was a huge cut off between the steps, that I wouldn't be able to jump. "Shit." Ryker muttered under his breath.

"We can go back up, there's a window to climb out of." I stated, but then heard banging, making the whole staircase move in response. My eyes went wide and I looked at Ryker.

"Thompson!" Derrick's voice yelled, and I saw a shadow start approaching down the stairs. "We have to jump off." Ryker stated, and my eyes grew wider "Are you insane?!"

The spiral staircase was attached to the wall and went around and around, but the sewer was in the middle. "Yes. Now, jump Rain." Ryker rushed. "We could kill ourselves!" I exclaimed.

Ryker grabbed me by my face and said "I rather die with you then without you." I sighed, and Ryker quickly jumped off the edge and went down.

I flinched once he hit the water and didn't want to look. "Thompson!" Derrick yelled again, while he was all the way at the top.

Taking a deep breath, I walked to the edge and jumped off. It was a few seconds of free-falling, but I made contact with the water and went under.

The water was deep; up to my the top of my neck. I looked around for Ryker, and couldn't find him. "Ryker!" I screamed, walking against the moving current of water that had been formed.

Water was crashing up against the walls and moving fast, making everything a blur. "Ryker!" I screamed, and I felt a pair of arms wrap around me from behind and pull me under water.

I caught one last breath before going under, and I closed my eyes. I heard a faint voice echo throughout the sewer, and I realized how close it was.

Waiting for it to pass by, I heard a door slam shut. I gasped for air when I got up and coughed up water that I inhaled. Ryker came up and pulled me over to the side of the sewer, where the water wasn't deep at all.

I was freezing cold, because the water wasn't necessarily warm. I ran my hands up and down arms as my teeth chattered. Ryker shrugged off his jacket and handed it to me. It was soaked but better than nothing.

"Thank you." I whispered, giving a forced smile. He just nodded before clenching his jaw "We should go down and take a left, there should be an exit."

~ ~ ~ ~

I ran, pushing the exit door open it was the first time I saw outside for what seemed like forever. Ryker across the field Since he came out another door, and I ran as I saw the rest of the gang.

I then saw something with a red flashing light in the middle of the field, and Ryker. "Rain!" Ryker shouted "Move!" Everything seemed to stop in slow motion, and I realized it was a bomb.

I plugged my ears at how loud it was and waited for it to pass by.

My eyes went wide and I started to move when Ryker sprinted across the field and pushed me over, making me fall. He fell on top of me, and the bomb went off.

Ryker blocked me from it protectively. I heard gun-shots and yells. When the bomb passed by, Ryker and I got up from the ground.

Zeke came storming out with a shot gun loaded, at his side. He aimed it towards me and I glanced back to see Hayes running towards Zeke.

Zeke pulled the trigger and I didn't feel anything. I glanced back from the hill and saw Hayes clutch his chest before falling to the ground.

"Nooooo!" I yelled, falling to the ground on my knees. Tears pricked my eyes and I gripped my hair in my hands. "Rain!" Ryker yelled, running back down to me and grabbing my hand to try and drag me up the hill.

Zeke then moved his gun and I was sobbing, but I didn't even care. The one person that helped me, was shot because of me. "Rain. Let's go!" Ryker's voice echoed through my ears. Then I heard a bullet release and my eyes went wide as I saw it come towards.

"RYKER!" I screamed, when it hit him and he fell to the ground. Tears streamed down my cheeks, and my heart broke in half. Vince and Neil came up to me as the rest of the gang went over to Ryker.

Vince and Neil picked me up from the ground as I fought against the grip by kicking and squirming, trying to get over to Ryker. "Rain, Rain, it's going to be okay." Vince whispered reassuringly.

I shook my head and Neil walked away to call 911, and I watched as everyone surrounded Ryker in worry.

* * * * * *

- Next Day -

I soothed the dress I was wearing out, and there was a knock at the door before it opened to reveal Ally walk in, dressed and ready.

"Well don't you look pretty." She offered a small smile. Pressing my lips in a tight line, I looked at myself in the mirror.

Funerals were never easy for me, no matter how close I was to the person or wasn't, they were still involved in my life and it was to hard to let go and say goodbye.

"He's off in a better place, Rain." Alessandra sighed, getting teary-eyed herself. I turned around to look at her and shook my head "He shouldn't have died." I whispered, before breaking into tears "He's Dead. He's really dead."

Alessandra pulled me into a tight hug and rubbed circles on my back "Shh..it'll be okay." I softly sobbed into her shoulder as she hugged me tightly.

"I just want to go home." I whispered, pulling back. She gave me a small forced smile "Just one more day." We were still in North Carolina, because the funeral was being held here.

But after that we were going back to New York, and honestly just wanted to go home and see my brothers and Alex. I wiped my eyes from the years and sniffled. "You're going to ruin your makeup." Alessandra chuckled.

I rolled my eyes at her, and sighed "Let's just get this over with."

~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~

"Hey." Reece came up to me and hugged me quickly "How you doing, kiddo?" "I don't understand why you call me kiddo, you're only a year older then me." I scoffed.

Reece chuckled slightly and put an arm out to me "Walk me in?" "I'd be delighted." I forced a lightful wholehearted tone, then taking Reece's arm as we started to walk towards the church.

"I haven't been to church in forever." Reece whispered "So we do that smacking forehead thing?"

"You me the sign of the cross?" I questioned, raising an eyebrow at him. His mouth formed an 'o' shape, and I sighed in disgrace. We entered the church and I walked over to the fountain of holy water and dipped my finger tips in before doing the sign of the cross.

Reece just followed my lead, and I scanned over the church. It had stain glass Windows, the aisle was a shiny marble floor, the alter was placed in front of a mural. Tears started to prick my eyes again, and I walked down the aisle to the pew where the rest of the gang was. I moved over and sat down my Leah. "You look pretty." She whispered, with tears in her eyes.

"You do too." I whispered back. I was in a black skater dress Liz had lent me, red high top Converses, black leather jacket, with my hair curled slightly and make up done with red-lipstick from "compliments" of Alessandra.

"We are gathered hear today, to celebrate a life but not a death." The priest spoke to everyone in the church. A tear escaped my eye and traveled down my cheeks.

He died because of me..

Peter; who was on my other side, pulled me into a hug and whispered in my ear "I'll sing you Beyonce songs later, if you want." I bit my lip and I laid my head on his shoulder.

I glanced over and saw Will on the verge of tears and an ugly cry face. Peter whispered in my ear "Will's a very emotional person. He's on his man period, his whoremones are messing with him."

"We shall not focus on the death, but the life that has been lived and for them to live in eternal heaven." The priest preached out to everyone.

I looked to see the casket being pushed up to the stair that led up to the alter and my heart fell. Tears started to escape my eyes more and more, and my heart fell. "We have been asked to do an open casket by the family." Father said, and the alter boys opened the casket slowly.

"Excuse me." I said to Liz, and walked past everyone that was on the end of the pew. I ran up the aisle and the guilt was killing me, because it was all my fault.

I ran out of the church and tears were streaming down my face. "Rain? What are you doing out here?" A voice spoke up, and I shook my head "I can't do it. I can't do it, Ryk."

Ryker sighed, pulling me into his chest, wrapping his arms around me, and resting his chin on top of my head. Clutching his shirt in my hands, I cried into his chest "This is all my fault."

Ryker was saved from the bullet proof vest he was wearing, and it didn't make it through all the way to injure him.

"No it's not, princess." He whispered, combing his fingers through my hair, "It'll all be okay, I promise."

~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~

I got out of the taxi cab and slammed the door shut as he stopped in front of my house. I walked up the driveway and to the front door of my house, taking my keys out; I unlocked the door.

Turning on the light, I put my suitcase to the wall and threw my keys down onto the small table by the door. It felt good to be home, after a long drive back from North Carolina with Liz and Peter.

"Rain." A voice whispered shocked, making my eyes snap up to see my dad standing at the end of the stairs. "Dad." I nodded, bracing myself for getting into massive trouble. He approached me and I flinched with every move.

He stopped in front of and let out a deep exhale in relief. I was then pulled into a tight hug, and froze; not expecting this. "Rain Eliza, I'm so sorry. I'm so sorry for treating you like have, I didn't realize how much you meant to me until I didn't have you."

I blinked slowly, and pulled back to see tears in his eyes. "I'm going to turn myself around and start seeing a therapist, and quit back on the vodka."

"Really?" I asked and he nodded stern "Really." I guess it was true that you don't realize how much you love someone until they're not in your life anymore, no matter what impact they had on You.

My dad was telling the truth, you could see it his eyes and hear it in his voice. He finally found closure from my mom and him getting divorced, he was finally over it. "Dad...Can I ask you something?" I asked, shifting in my place.

"Of course." He nodded. "I want to move out." I breathed "And Move in with Liz, she offered me a room and I think it'd be good idea considering I'm graduating soon and everything."

My dad clenched his jaw, "Will talk about it in the morning. How about to you go to bed?" I nodded slightly then starting to walk upstairs, when my dad stopped me "Rain."

Turning around to face him, I asked "Yeah?" "I love You." He smiled, and I smiled slightly "Love you too," then walking upstairs to my actual bedroom.

* * * * * * *

- Next Day -

"YOU ARE THE ONLY WHAT THAT NEEDS TO KNOW, I'LL KEEP YOU MY DIRTY LITTLE SECRET!" Vince sang obnoxiously into the microphone, and I quickly hit the buttons on the fake guitar.

I watched the TV screen and watched the color circle things appear on and I hit the buttons on the guitar. "I'll keep you my dirty little secret!" Vince sang, then pointing the Mic at me.

"Dirty little secret." I whispered the back up vocals and the song came to an end. "97%, suck it Thompson!" Vince, dropped the Mic as his score came up on Band Hero.

My score then came up and I turned to look at Vince "99%, swallow it Baker!" I joked, earning a glare from Vince. After school today, the guys decided they were going to 'help me with my homework ', because quote "Its just High School homework and is the easiest thing in the world."

So when we got the warehouse they took one look at my Trigonometry homework and decided we should take a 'break' for awhile to play band hero. "Alright, you're going down Thompson." Will said, grabbing the mic and guitar.

I laughed, shaking my head at him "Oh you're on, Douglas." I heard the door swing open and my eyes snapped over to see Ryker walk in, as he threw down his keys on one of the tables.

Tensing up, I took the guitar strap off and nudged Will "Rematch later. I have to start my homework." "Chicken." He called after me, as I walked into the kitchen.

It's been really awkward between Ryker and I lately, we're not back together and we don't even seem like friends, but how are you suppose to even be friends with someone while knowing you love each other?

In the back of my head there's always that part that reminds me that he lied about everything. Our relationship was based off lies, no matter how much truth there was.

"Hey". Liz smiled at me, as I grabbed a water bottle from the fridge. "Hey." I said, jumping up on the counter and unscrewing the cap. "How was school and catching up?"

"Hell." I answered without a doubt. I've been out so long, I came back and got pounded with work, "I have a History paper due tomorrow and I suck at History."

"Ask My brother, he's good at it." Leah shrugged. "Reece is good a History?" I asked, raising an eyebrow. Leah narrowed her eyes at me "No, your boyfriend."

"We're not togeth-" I started, but quickly stopped when Ryker came into the kitchen. I pressed my lips in a thin line, shifting in my spot, Ryker grabbed a water bottle from the fridge as well.

Silence filled the room, and Leah spoke up "Hey Ryk, can you help Rain with her History paper?" His eyes snapped to mine, and she raised an eyebrow.

"No, it's fine. Really-." I started, but Leah cut in "Great, Ryker is going to the Doyle's tonight, Rain you're going as well." "Yeah, you can sleepover too." Liz offered, popping a chip her mouth.

"Rain!" Will's voice yelled, as he came in "Are you done being awkward around your boyfriend-or-not-boyfriend? Because I declare a rematch from earlier."

I sent Will a warning look, and his eyes widened as he gulped. "Run." I said stern, and Will quickly took off "PETER! HELP!" He yelled.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

"Rain, it's really simple." Mrs. Doyle sighed, tapping her pencil at my textbook, "Just pick someone and write."

"But I don't understand what I'm suppose to write about." I frowned, running a hand through my hair. "I don't know how to explain it to you. Liz get the guys, maybe they can help."

Liz nodded before yelling there names, making them come upstairs moments later. "Rain doesn't understand this writing assignment and I don't know to explain it."

"What's the subject?" Neil asked, and Mrs. Doyle answered "History." "Yep, nope, I'm out." Neil shook his head.

Ryker rolled his eyes before coming up behind me and scanning over the textbook page. My breath hitched and I froze once Ryker's chest pressed up against my back.

He then reached for my pencil that was in my hand and when his hand touched mine, electricity shot through my arm.

"You pick a historic person that supported a cause, like the social reform or something and you write a debate on what the person wanted to represent and then you have to represent the public's side." Ryker explained.

I nodded slightly, trying to figure out why it electricity shot through me at such a small touch. "Oh." I said, kinda of understanding what Ryker said, "Thanks."

"Alright mom." Neil spoke up "Will be back," grabbing his keys. "Where are you going?" Liz asked, And Niel smirked "Platinum Plus."

My eyes widened and I was about to go all jealous girlfriend on Ryker but realized that we weren't together anymore.

"Bye Liz, Bye Rain." Ryker quickly said before walking out of the house. "Understand the paper?" Mrs. Doyle asked hopefully, snapping me out of my thoughts.

"Uh..yeah." I nodded, lying just so that she wouldn't have to explain it again.

~ ~ ~

"Liz, come on." I said, getting out of the truck and waiting for Liz to get out.

"Rain! I'm not going in there!" She exclaimed. "Oh please," I rolled my eyes "You haven't been to a strip club, before."

"Not for women!" She exclaimed, then her eyes going wide "Is this your way of saying you're lesbian?!"

"What?! No, Elizabeth!" I yelled, shaking my head at her "I am not lesbian, not that there's anything wrong with being les-..No! I'm not!"

Platinum Plus was a strip club that was popular around the city, and guys went crazy for it. "Let's go." I said, dragging her hand inside and she groaned.

"ID?" The security guy asked. We both handed them to him for him to examine. "You may go in." He nodded, handing back the ID's.

Once I walked in, I had no idea what to expect because I've only been to strip club of men before. "I already hate this." Liz muttered under her breath, "Why couldn't You and Ryker just have stayed the power couple, so we wouldn't have to be here?"

Shooting her a glare, I made my way through the crowd of people. A women went up to Liz, and Liz shook her head profusely as I laughed.

"No, No, I'm good." Liz decline the stripper, but the stripper insisted. "Rain, help." Liz mouthed over to me. I sent her a thumbs up and wink in response before walking away to go find the guys.

Music blasted a throughout the building and lights flashed. Not to mention there were poles with a lot of kinky stuff, making a shiver go up my spine.

Out of the corner of my eye, I saw Ryker and some stripper sitting on his lap, talking. My body tensed up, clutching my fist, I stormed over there.

Ryker's eyes snapped up to mine. "Off ." I ordered the girl, snapping my fingers. She looked at Ryker, and Ryker clenched his jaw "Ex girlfriend."

Her golden eyes snapped up to mine "This is the ex-girlfriend I've heard all about." Ryker sighed, nodding and shifted the girl off his lap before standing up.

"What do you want, Rain? Don't you have a History paper to finish?" He questioned, his voice already filled with annoyance. I took his hand in mine "Dance with me?" I asked, pulling him out to the middle of the dance floor.

His eyes bored into mine, and I took his hands in mine; making him move his arms as he just stood there. "Ryk, come on." I frowned at him.

"No Rain." He said, annoyed. I sighed, running a hand through my hair, "Can we talk?" He clenched his jaw before nodding slightly and following me out of the strip club.

Once we got out to the cold chilly air of the night, we walked over to the side of the building and the street lights lit up the night sky. "I've been thinking..and maybe we should just go back to being friends." I trailed off.

"No." He said. "What do you mean 'no'?" I asked, standing up straight.

"You want us to go back to being friend?!" Ryker asked in an Are-You-Serious tone "Rain, we can never go back to being 'just friends'!"

"Why not?!" I asked, raising my voice. "Because I love you!" He yelled, his eyes boring into mine. My whole body became tense, I swallowed a lump in my throat, and bit my lip nervously.

My heart fell and shattered into a million pieces. "Ryker..I love you to; but we can't be together.." I trailed off. "And why not, Rain?!" He yelled, getting defensive.

"Because it won't be the same! You lied to me about everything! I can't be in a relationship where I don't know if this I'm being told the truth or not! But let me tell you, I didn't want to find out my BOYFRIEND was Bipolar,a a drug dealer, and his past from being kidnapped!" I shouted.

"I did it to protect you!" He shouted back and I instantly shouted back "Protect me from yourself!" He became silent, clenching his jaw and looking off to the side for a moment.

"I did it because I love you, and goddamn it Rain; I never want to hurt you. I didn't need you to put me first before yourself." He said sincerely.

"You know you'll always come before me." I said, laying my hands flat on his chest. "And that's the problem. You're 18; you have other things to worry about." Ryker stated.

"Does it really matter my age?" I asked my voice cracking a bit, "Just because I'm still in High School doesn't mean I'm some kid who got caught up in a gang and fell for some Bad Boy."

"Some Bad Boy?" He questioned, raising an eyebrow at me while he clasped his hands around my wrist. I bit my lip, looking up at his bright blue eyes.

"I like to call it The Bad Boy's Gang." I whispered, making his lips tug up to a trademark Ryker Anderson smirk.

# Chapter 21

"I wouldn't doubt it." Abe narrowed his eyes at me, making me roll my in response. "Oh mio Dio! Cibo americano!" Andre and Tate exclaimed, coming up with a bunch of Twinkies.

"Twinkies?" I questioned, "They're not very good in my opinion. Definitely put to higher expectations then what they are." "Americani ingrati." Seb muttered under his breath in Italian.

"Io non sono un ingrato americano! E parlo Italain, idiota!" I exclaimed, sending him a glare. "Can we get them, Rain?" They all begged, and I sighed "Fine. Put them in the cart."

They all broke out into smiles, and I rolled my eyes in response. I had to do some grocery shopping because it was my turn to pick up food for the warehouse, and the guys wanted to come see an American grocery store.

I walked down an aisle; leaving the guys to stare at American junk food in starstruck. I shifted the basket on my arm, walking down an aisle of pasta sauce and other sauces.

I scanned over the shelves when a voice broke I'm "Rain." I whirled around, and jumped from being startled. My eyes then grew wide and I blinked slowly "W-What are you doing here?" I asked in complete shock.

"I had to see you. I had to make sure you were okay." He said honestly, coming closer to me. "A phone call would have done fine." I stated, still in shock.

Rolling his hazel eyes at me "Don't be ridiculous, Rain." He took the basket off my arm and set it down on the ground before taking my hands in his only to intertwine our fingers, bringing us closer together.

"I was thinking..and you're not back with Anderson-" He trailed off, and I blinked slowly. He started to lean in, and I froze about to pull back right when James was pushed away from me.

I looked to see an overprotective jelaous Ryker step in front of me and shove him back "What the hell do you think you're doing?!"

"Ryker." I warned, tugging on his hand to pull him back but he wouldn't budge. "James, maybe you should leave." I spoke up, and his eyes snapped to mine then looking at Ryker.

"I think I'm getting the girl you don't deserve." He said stern. "You better get the hell away from her before I kick your ass all the way back to North Carolina." Ryker gritted.

James through the first punch and hit right into Ryker's jaw. He quickly went tense and clutched his fist before sending a fist flying to Jame's stomach.

James shoved Ryker back into the shelves and a couple of the glass containers fell, breaking once they hit the ground. Ryker stumbled a bit before regaining balance and sending a punch right into Jame's nose, kicking him in the gut.

James hit the other shelves and more things fell off and broke. "Stop! Stop!" I yelled, but they continued to argue. Walking up, I quickly caught Ryker's fist before it came in contact with James.

"Enough!" I yelled, and people were circling around us. "I'm not dealing with this bullshit!" I yelled. "Rain what about us-" James started.

"No, there is no us James. You know I'm in love with Ryker." I sighed, running a hand through my brown long hair. I then saw Ryker's lips tug up to a smirk, and I turned my attnetion to him.

"Don't. Because we're done, you lied to me about everything. I'm not dealing with that." I stated stern, and Ryker grabbed my hands in his.

"Rain, baby. You know I love you, and I'm sorry. Can't we just get past this-" He said, but I took my hands out of his. "No, we already talked about this."

I picked the basket up off the ground and walked away, pushing through the crowd that had formed.

~ ~ ~ ~

I opened the front door of the house, walking in and dropping my stuff on the side table by the door. I heard someone playing the piano, which echoed throughout the house.

Shoving my phone in my back pocket and heading towards the living room; I saw Joel and Alex sitting at the piano. I leaned up against the wall, crossing my arms; I watched as they played at the same time and Alex hummed softly.

They both ended the song then, and Joel gave her a kiss. My heart fell and Ryker just kept appearing in my mind. Snapping out of my thoughts, I clapped.

They both pulled back and looked at me startled "Hey." Alex gave me a small smile, hugging me quickly "How you've been?" "Okay, I guess." I shrugged.

Since we've been home, I've been sending a lot of time with my brothers, Alex, and Shaliene from school. The gang is just a lot to handle with right now, and its a lot to take on.

"Well I have homework I'm going to head to the library for some books. I just wanted to drop off some groceries." I stated, standing up straight. "Drive safely." Joel nodded.

"Always do." I whispered loud enough for them to hear, before turning around and walking out of the house again.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

The bell rang when I opened the door of the library, only to be greeted b the librarian; Mrs. Brooks.

"Oh my snickerdoodles. Rain, its been so long since I've seen you." Mrs. Brooks gasped, hugging me quickly. "Hey Mrs. B." I smiled, pulling out of the hug.

"I heard everything on the news. I was so worried, are you okay?" She asked concerned, tucking a piece of hair behind my ear. "Yeah, I just caught up in a bunch of stuff."

"Well if you ever want help, you know where I am." She smiled. "Thanks Mrs. B." I chucked, then walking away to the back of the library.

Scanning over the shelves to find a world history book on world history of the middle ages. I flipped through the papers and skimmed over to decide if I needed it or not.

"Rain?" A innocent voice questioned behind me, making me whirl around to see Melanie. "Mel? What are you doing here?" I asked, sqautting down to her height.

"Getting a new book since I finished mine." She grinned. I looked around but couldn't find anyone "Who are you with?"

"My mom." She stated. "Your mom?" I asked confused, furrowing my eyebrows together. "Melanie." A voice called "Oh there you are."

I looked up to see a women with long brown hair, a light complexion, pink plump lips, skinny figure dressed in a white shirt, black jeans, and heels. But I knew those bright blue eyes.

"Oh I'm sorry- She just walks off sometimes." The women apologized and I was in a state of shock. "Mommy." Melanie tugged on her hand.

I stood up from the squatting position I was in and stared at her. "Mrs. Anderson?" I asked, blinking slowly. "You must be Rain.." She trailed off.

"How'd you know?" I asked. "Because you're exactly how Ryker expalined you as the most beautiful girl in the world." She stated with a small smirk tugging at her lips.

"I'm sorry..I'm just in shock. Your Ryker's mom?" I asked, and she nodded with a small smile "Yes, they ran into me at South Carolina and Leah and Reece encouraged me to move up here."

"Oh my God.." I whispered in a mumble. "Want to grab some coffee? I'll expalin everything." She offered, and I looked up to her bright blue eyes that were identical to Ryker's.

~ ~ ~ ~

"He really did that?" I asked laughing wholeheartedly. "Yes he did." Mrs. Anderson laughed. I sobered up, and Melanie was asleep in my lap with her head on my shoulder.

"Mrs. Anderson." I spoke up as she took a sip of her coffee. "What about your husband?" I asked pit of curiosity.

She gave me small forced smile "Callum and I aren't married anymore, but aren't legally divorced because it cost money and we just never got it filed." "Callum? Thats their dad?" I asked, reffering to all the Anderson kids.

"Yes. Callum and I met in High School, when we were in the same gang and I got pregnant with Leah at 15." She explained. My eyes went wide "You had Leah at 15?" I questioned surprised.

"Yep." She nodded "I was in a gang that pressured me into things and being a virigin wasn't acceptable. So things happened and I got impregnated by Callum; and don't do what I did Rain, you're a smart girl."

Pressing my lips in a thin line "Thank you." Arena was the birth mom of Leah, Ryker, Reece, Faith, and Melanie. She expalined to me about everything and why she had to give them away.

She said Callum; Mr. Anderson weren't financially stable to raise a kid let a long 5. Once they started to get back on their feet, they searched and searched for them but couldn't find them anywhere. Mr. Anderson resorted to alcohol and apparently just got out of jail from 4 years because of a drunk hit and run, and he alsp use to abuse the kids when he got drunk. Arena got kicked out om the streets when Callum first got arrested, and she's been struggling to get a job.

The gang ran into her in South Carolina while looking for me. Leah and Reece encouraged her to move up to New York to gain custody of Faith and Melanie. She also got a job as a 'daycare' for kids that deal with family issues.

"Now you've asked me a bunch of questions, now its my turn." She cleared her throat, sitting up straight "Why are you and Ryker broken up?"

My lips parted and I blinked slowly at her "What do you mean?" "If he loves you as much as he makes it sounds, then you two are meant to be."

"He lied.." I trailed off in a whisper. "Every relationship has lies Rain, if they don't then theres something wrong." She sighed. "I just don't know if I can trust him anymore." I breathed.

"Ryker's been through a lot. He was abused when his father got drunk, then put in foster care for years only to be beaten by a million other people. He was in and out of juvie, got into sex, drugs, and alcohol at a early age because he had no one to guide him. He was split up from his siblings and felt alone like no one cared." She listed "He was moved to a different family every other week and promised that it would get better. Ryker was lied too about everything, which made him the way he is today. He was taught it was okay to lie because the truth didn't matter."

"Wow.." I trailed off realizing how hard he actually had it. Everything Arena was saying was true too, because it was all backed up with a reason that matched up.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

"Rain, come on." Shaliene pouted at me as we walked down the corridor. "Its not really my scene Shae." I shrugged, hugging my books to my chest.

"Its prom." She narrowed her eyes at me "It's everyone's scene." Rolling my eyes at her, we stopped at my locker as I quickly punched in my combination to transfer my books.

"I just don't know...I just got back after a month of being kidnapped, and it'd be weird if I showed up at Prom. Plus you have a date, and I don't want to go let along by myself." I stated.

It was Friday night, and our High School; The Dalton private School was throwing Prom tomorrow. I went to Prom last year with Alex and a couple other people, but hated it.

"You don't have to go by yourself." Shaliene spoke up cheerfully "What about Hudson?" "Kai? Hudson Kai? The football jock...that I've only talked for a month because we had a History assignment together and Study hall.." I trailed off, narrowing my eyes at her.

"He's had his eyes on you and ecspecially since you're single now." She stated. "Well I don't know..I kinda just got out of a serious relationship, and still don't know how I'm not crying all the time," I shut my locker door.

We headed outside and it was pretty hot out. "Rain!" A voice yelled, making my eyes snap over to see the whole gang leaning up against their cars. I grabbed Shaliene's forearm and pulled her over to everybody.

"Hey. Why you guys here?" I asked. "Just figure'd we'd pick you up." Craig shrugged. "Nice uniform." Felix snorted.

"Fight me, Felix." I said, giving my books to Shaliene. "Come at me, Thompson!" He joked back and I laughed, taking my books back.

"Oh, this is Shaliene. Shaliene this is Craig, Vince, Neil, Liz, Will, Peter, Reece, Leah, Alessandra, Juliet,Celeste, Luca, Seb, Valentino, Aaron, Levi, Abe, Andre, Tate, Augustus, Dawson, Felix, Memphis, and Ryker." I breathed at the mouthful of names.

Shaliene immediately looked at Ryker while her lips tugged up to a smirk, "You're the Ryker Anderson, I've heard so much about." I nudged her in the ribs, sending her a warning look.

"Heads up!" A voice yelled, and I quickly caught a football in my hands. Looking at the football it had 'Will you tackle Prom with me?' In big letters.

Pressing my lips in a thin line, I looked up and saw Hudson jog up to me with a wide smile "Hey Rain." "Uhh..hey?" I trailed off confused.

Hw scratched the back of his neck nervously and said "So I know you're single now and all.." Ryker stood up straight, ready to pummel the guy, but Reece put an arm put in front of him.

"And this is really late." He admitted, "Do you want to go to Prom with me?"

"Prom?" I chocked, my eyes widening.

Shaliene sent me and I-Told-You look. "Oh hell no, you better back off my ship cause you're sinking it-" Liz started getting defensive, but Peter and Neil grabbed her back.

Hudson gave a confused look, before turning his attention back to me. "Uh.." I trailed off, and everyone stared at me to hear my answer. "Sure." I pursed my lips, nodding slightly.

Hudson bit his lip, before smiling "Great. I'll pick you up at 6." He winked, walking away. "Fuck this shit, I'm out." Liz muttered angrily, walking away.

"Sis!" Neil called after her but she ignored him. I sighed, running a hamd through my hair before my eyes met Ryker's.

He clenched his jaw, shaking his head at me disgrace "Wow Rain, really shallow." Ryker walked off, getting into his truck and driving away. "Hey, don't listen to him." Celeste reassured.

"Yeah, he's just being jealous. He'll get over it." Juilet offered a small smile. "Why am I such an idiot?" I whispered to myself, clutching my hair.

"Rain, you're not." Leah shook her head, "Juilet's right; he's just being jealous."

"Noowww, what about dress shopping?" Alessandra grinned trying to lighten the mood.

~ ~ ~ ~

"Liz, this is the 18th time I've called. Please answer." I sighed, before hanging uo the voice mail that she kept sending my calls too.

"What about this?" Alessandra asked, holding a dress up. "Yeah I guess, fine." I mumbled, typing quickly on my phone to try and get Liz to answer. "Rain, you didn't even look." Alessandra sighed, making my head snap up from my phone.

She held a bright blue short lace dress up in her hands. "I guess, I can't really think about dresses right now." "Well Prom is tomorrow night." She narrowed her eyes at me.

My phone buzzed in my hands, making me quickly look who it was in hope to see Liz texting me back.

Hudson Kai: Hey babe, can the team and I come to your house for pictures because you have the nicest scenery. ;) ♡

"Who is it?" Celeste asked curiously. "Hudson.." I trailed off, "He wants to have pictures at my house with the whole football team and their dates."

"Rain." Juliet's voice approached, making my eyes snap up to her. "Wow..." I whispered, staring at the dress she held up. It was probably one of the most gorgeous dresses I've ever seen and I'm not really a dress type of person.

"You like?" She asked with a smile. She had a red lace long mermaid dress that had somewhat of a travel behind it. I bit my lip, and nodded "That one."

~ ~ ~

Parking at the warehouse, I got out of my truck with my keys twirling around my finger. I heard something smash from inside, then yelling.

I froze in my place and the front door opened and slammed shut. I saw Ryker walk with a angered expression, and I stopped him "Hey, what's going on?" I asked confused.

"You're the last person I want see right now, Rain. So I suggest backing off." He gritted, starting to walk to his truck. "Ryker!" I called, grabbing his hand.

He turned around to face me and his eyes were a dark blue which were filled with anger. "Whats going on? Why are you so mad?" I asked.

"Why am I mad?!" He yelled, "Oh I don't know?! Maybe because the girl I'm in love with broke up with me and is going out with some jock, and that she met my mom without fucking telling me!" He yelled.

I froze, "H-How you'd know about that?-" I started but was cut off by Ryker. "And that she knew for 4 months that my sister was pregnant and didn't tell me!" He yelled.

I blinked slowly "You find out?" "I can't believe you, Rain!" He yelled, "My own sister and you hid that she was pregnant with Craig's baby!"

"It wasn't my place to tell you!" I defended. "I don't know who you are anymore!" He yelled, shaking his head at me.

"What do you mean?" I asked soflty, becoming tense. "You're not the same Rain. We aren't the same. We kept hiding everything from each other." He clenched his jaw "And maybe you're right..maybe we just shouldn't be together anymore."

My heart broke at hearing those words escape his mouth. "Yeah, we should just move on." I blinked repeadtly.

"Thats the thing." He said, making me look up at him, "I can't." "Ryk..we have too. We're not compatible; we fight constantly just like right now." I stated "We have to move on. You have to move on."

"I'm not going to be able to stop loving you Rain!" He shouted, "I have never loved someone like I love YOU!"

"We can't do this." I sighed, shaking my head, starting head towards the warehouse and Ryker got into his truck without saying another word.

# Chapter 22

There was a knock at my bedroom door before it opened up to Jax. "Hey sis." He smiled, walking in. "Hey." I offered a small smile.

It was 2 p.m. and I've only gotten out of bed to brush my teeth, hair, and eat. Last night was a nightmare; Leah was sobbing her eyes out, Craig was beaten the shit out of, Liz is still mad at me, and Ryker wasn't answering anyone's phone call or text.

I wonder what being a normal teenager feels like...

"Well I know you're going to prom tonight..and there's going to be peer-pressure.." He trailed off.

"Jax." I said, sitting up as I knew where this was going. "And I don't want you making a little mistake, that changes your whole world." Jax sighed.

"Jax." I groaned, rubbing my temples and burring my face in my hands. "I'm serious Rain, you could end up with an STD or pregnant..and you haven't had sex since you were with Tyson.." He trailed off.

I slowly started to look up from my hands and at Jax. His eyes then went wide "You did not!?"

"Jax it was in Italy and we were together for months.." I shrugged. Jax ran his hands through his hair, "Tell me you used protection! Please tell me you used protection!"

"Jax!" I yelled, embarrassed as ever. "Oh my God, Rain." He muttered, "You could be pregnant."

"We used a condom, alright!" I blurted out, and he sighed in relief, "Oh thank God." My face had to be bright red by now red by now and I pointed at the door "Out."

"I meant it Rain. Please be safe." He narrowed his eyes at me. "JAX!" I yelled, and he sighed before walking out. I plopped back down onto my bed, staring up at the ceiling.

~ ~ ~ ~

"Rain sit still." Ally said, and I sighed in response. My bedroom door opened and I turned my head quickly to see who it was.

"Ow!" I yelled, quickly putting a hand up to my neck because the curling iron Ally was using, just burnt my neck. "Told you not to move." Alessandra pointed out.

I rolled my eyes, and stood up to walk over to Liz. "Hey." I said and she continued to give me the silent treatment. "Liz..come on, you're one of my best friends; you can't ignore me forever." I said, but no response.

"Why are you even mad?" I asked. "Why am I mad?" She questioned, her head snapping to mine, "Because you don't see what you're doing to yourself Rain! You're making these dumb decisions that are hurting you."

Standing up straight, I pressed my lips in a tight line. "When are you just going to open your eyes and see that you love him; and there's no denying that." She continued, "You trusted your dad again and he beat you to the point where you couldn't walk, and you know who was always there?"

She paused, crossing her arms over her chest "Ryker. Ryker was there. So if you can trust your dad again, trust Ryker again." Swallowing a lump in my throat "You still mad at me?"

She shook her head, giving a small smile "No. How could I ever stay mad at you." She pulled me into a tight hug.

"Ok, you have a prom to get ready for." Liz grinned, pulling back from me "And I was thinking something like a smoky eye."

~ ~ ~ ~

Clipping the earings in my ears the doorbell went off and my brothers yelled my name from downstairs. I quickly headed out of room and down the grand staircase.

"Hey." Hudson smiled at me, and I bit my lip "Hey." Walking up to him, he pecked my cheek and handed me a red corsage. "Aww, thanks." I smiled, as he slipped it onto my wrist.

"You look really pretty." He said, "Red is a really good color on you." "Thanks." I smiled, and a voice cleared.

I looked back to see Ryker and I stuttered "W-What are you doing here?" "Just came by to see, like the rest of the gang." He clenched his jaw.

"Uh..Hudson, I'll be right back and then we can take pictures." I said, and he nodded. I grabbed Ryker's hand and led him out to the library room.

"You really do look beautiful." He whispered. "Don't even try. Why haven't you been answering anyone?" I asked.

"Because I didn't want to have to deal with anyone." Ryker clenched his jaw. "See! This what I mean! I can't trust you, because you go and pull stuff like this!" I exclaimed.

"Rain, my sister is 4 months pregnant with her baby daddy as Craig!" He shouted. "Ok, mistakes happen! But maybe you should show some support, and be glad its not you in that situation!"

"I rather it be us in that situation, because maybe we'd actually talk to each other without yelling and fighting!" Ryker yelled.

"You're the one fighting!" I yelled, "You're the one causing all this! Because if you didn't lie, maybe we'd actually still be together!"

"Stop putting this all on me! You're not innocent either, Rain! Remember kissing and almost having sex with James while we were still together, because I still do! And not telling me my sister was pregnant, or that you were going to have coffee with my mom!" He yelled, his voice raising.

"I'm done! I'm not dealing with this anymore, Get what's yours and leave!" I yelled, knowing I had some of Ryker's stuff up in my room.

Ryker then picked me up and carried me over to the other-side of the room. "You." He whispered, "You are mine."

Blush crept onto my cheeks and my heart fluttered. Ryker kept me pinned up against the wall, and he started to lean in closer to my lips.

"Rain." A voice approached, and Ryker quickly moved away from me.

My dad came in and said "Pictures." "Alright, I'll be right out in sec." I said.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

"So let me hoollddd both your hands in the hooolleess of your sweater!" We all sang, and even though it was a fake fan song I still loved it.

Prom was going good so far, after pictures we all went out for dinner and arrived at school. Hudson was really sweet, and the dates of the football players were too.

It was nice to actually party like a normal teenager though, because since I've been caught up in all this gang stuff; I never was a normal High Schooler at football games getting drunk, but instead I was drag racing, or escaping from other gangs.

Hudson twirled me and I laughed as he brought me back to him. "I'm going to get us something to drink, I'll be right back." He said, once the song ended.

I nodded, and he walked over to the drink and food table. I walked over to the table where all our stuff was, and searched for my phone. I looked to see a bunch of text messages from everyone asking me how it was going.

"Anyone I know?" A voice asked, making me whirl around to see Blake, and his flickered to my phone "So I want the deets on the gang."

I put my phone away and glared at him. "I heard you met my brother and step sister. Sorry about Troian; she's a real bitch." Blake admitted.

Furrowing my eyebrows together, I didn't understand why he wasn't threatening me or fighting with me. "You back with Anderson?" He asked, shoving his hands in his front pockets.

Shaking my head, I pursed my lips "No." "Thats a shame, you guys really were meant for each other." Blake shrugged. "You hate Ryker though?" I questioned, considering they absolutely beat the shit out of each other anytime they were around each other.

"Yeah, but I hate my brother even more and what he did was NOT right at all. There was no need, for doing that to you; because knowing that gang, it had to be brutal. I give you props Rain, really." He nodded at me, "Well have a goodnight, Rain."

He started to walk off, but I stopped him "Blake, wait." He turned around to look at me and I asked "Are you still part of the Dark moon gang?"

He rubbed his clenched jaw "Yeah, but I'm quitting. So you won't have to worry about me." I bit my lip, nodding slightly "Good choice."

"See you Thompson." He said, putting a fist up. "Bye Monroe." I chuckled, fist bumping him and he walked over to his date.

"Hey." Hudson's voice snapped me out of my thoughts, "You good?" I nodded, taking the plastic cup of fruit punch from him, "Yeah, I'm fine."

"Think you're going to win Prom King?" I asked. "Got this in the bag." He smirked. "Who do you thinks going go to win Queen?" I asked, taking a sip of the drink.

"You." He said nonchalantly, with a shrug. "I'm not even on the ballad, I can't win." I said, and he leaned in closer to me "Well you should, because you're the most beautiful girl here."

Hudson then started to lean in slowly, I felt his mint breath on my lips and inhaled his scent of cologne. His arm wrapped around my waist, and I didn't know what to do.

"Reveal of Dalton's High School Annual Prom King and Queen!" The speakers blew, making Hudson and I pull back from each other.

"And this years, Prom King is Hudson Kai!" Principal Adams said, reading off an envelope. Hudson smirked as everyone looked back at him. He handed me his drink, and walked up to the stage.

They set a crown on top of his head as everyone cheered and clapped. "Alright, Alright." Principal Adams called over everyone, "This years Prom Queen..."

All the girls were in hope of their name being called and getting that crown with a dance of the Hudson Kai. I honestly didn't want it, because it draws all attention to you and I already have enough on me.

"Karlee Manson." Principal Adams said into the microphone, and everyone made a path for Karlee. I didn't know her very well, but she seemed nice and was head cheerleader.

Clapping and cheers erupted again as they placed the tiara on her head. Hudson took Karlee's hand to lead her out to the middle of the floor for a slow dance. He sent me a wink, and I sent one back.

~ ~ ~ ~

"Come on, Rain." Hudson pushed, with his lips against my neck. "Hudson, stop." I said, but he didn't listen.

I pushed him off me, "No means no." "Rain I asked you because I know you've put out before." He rolled his eyes at me.

"You what?!" I choked. Attention now was being drawn towards us. "I'm a football player, I have to sleep with someone on Prom night." He gritted in a whisper

He pushed me back up against the wall, I tried phshing him off me. He grabbed my ass, and I slapped him across the face in reflex.

"Hey!" A voice yelled, and Blake with his date came up "Hudson let her go." "And what makes you think, you get a say?" Hudson gritted.

"Because I'm captain, and what I say goes." Blake gritted, "And Rain doesn't need another asshole raping her." Blake shoved Hudson off me, and he said to me "Go get some air."

I grabbed my phone and ran out of the gym. My phone then started ringing, to see Reece's number on my screen. "Hello?" I answered.

"Rain!" His voice was filled with worry, "Ryker was in a car accident. He's being sent to the hospital. They said he's in a coma."

My whole body froze, and I couldn't think straight. "No.." I whispered, pinching myself to hope I was in a dream but nothing was working.

Tears started to prick my eyes and I took my heels off and ran down the hall. I fumbled for my keys in my leather jacket.

"This can't be happening.." I whispered, and tears were streaming down my face. I started to run to a exit door past the boys locker room, but I was grabbed and pulled into the locker room.

It was pitch black and smelt like cologne exploded. I was pinned up against a wall and tried to escape whomevers grip I was in. "Let me go." I struggled.

The lights turned on and I met a very familiar pair of blue eyes. "Ryk.." I whispered, "But Reece just called me-..he said you were in a car accident."

Instead Ryker was standing in front of me in a tux, "Can't believe you actually fell for that. You know how I drive, and I don't crash." He narrowed his eyes at me. "You asshole!" I yelled, smacking his arm but her quickly caught my wrist.

"Why am I an asshole?" He questioned. "Because you scared me!" I exclaimed. "And why were you scared?" He questioned, raising an eyebrow me.

"Because I love you!" I exclaimed, and tore my hand out pf his grip. His lips tugged up to a smirk, and he pushed me back up against the wall. "You know we met here." He whispered.

Biting my lip, I realized that Ryker and I actually did meet here in the boys locker room. "Well won't that be a pleasant story to tell people." I breathed, and Ryker came closer to me.

"You know it really was all your fault about getting into that drug deal here, and meeting at a High School. You're just lucky I was here-" I started to ramble was cut off when Ryker smashed his lips into mine.

I stood up straight, with my back pressing up against the wall. I gave into his kiss, and his tongue slid across my teeth asking for entry.

He wrapped his arms around my waist and kept us chest to chest. I had my arms wrapped around his neck and tugged lightly on his hair.

The kiss was wanting and passionate with no gentleness whatsoever. Ryker pulled on my lip, before we both broke away for air.

Our breath was both heavy, and he pressed his forehead to mine. "You have no idea how long I've wanted to do that." He whispered.

I placed my hands flat on his chest and caught my breath. "I'm going to ask you something that I should've asked you a long time ago." He said, then standing back.

He got down on one knee, and I froze. He pulled something out of his pocket, and I covered my mouth with my hands out of shock.

"Rain Eliza Thompson...I love you, even though you're a total brat sometimes." He said. "Ryk.." I trailed off.

"Will you go to prom with me?" He asked, holding up a dime. My jaw dropped, and he smiled before standing up. "You're such an ass." I scoffed, and he laughed, pecking my lips.

"I'm keeping the dime though." I said, taking it from him. "You can keep it, I get my pay-check tomorrow." He said, making me roll my eyes. I stared up at him, and put a hand on his cheek.

"Babe, do me a favor and shave?" I said, referring to the stubble on his cheeks. "Babe?" He cocked an eyebrow at me, "Last time I checked, only couples say that."

I threw my arms loosely around his neck. "Take me back?" I asked, biting my lip.

"Always, princess." He said, pressing his lips back to mine. My heart fluttered, electricity shot through me, and butterflies erupted my stomach.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

My eyes flickered open and the sun filled through windows and curtains. "Good morning, beautiful." Ryker's voice whispered, and I turned on my side to face Ryker.

He tucked a piece of my hair behind my ear and his eyes boring to mine. "Morning." I smiled back. "I could get use to waking up next to you every morning." Ryker whispered, playing with my hair.

We both stared at each other for a few moments with silence filling the air. But with Ryker and I, silence was a thousand words.

I then headd the door open, and Ryker sighed "That's Ally," then standing up and pulling on a pair of joggers on. He handed me one of his shirts and kissed my forehead.

Ryker walked out of the bedroom. I sat up and quickly clasped a bra on and pulled on underwear before throwing on the plain white t-shirt Ryker gave me.

I ran to the bathroom and brushed my teeth and threw my hair up in a messy bun. Heading out, I walked to the kitchen and Alessandra's eyes snapped to mine. "Rain..I didn't know you spent the night." She trailed off, and I walked over to the fridge.

"How'd you guys sleep? I mean if you did do any sleeping?" Alessandra smirked, sending a wink. "Alessandra!" I warned, sending a glare at her.

"Just saying." She shrugged, taking a sip of her water. Ryker claimed that it was the "after prom" that counted, which basically was just a way to get me to sleep with him.

"Oh how was Prom?" She asked, giving me a cheeky grin. Ryker put up with a bunch of teenagers and stayed with me the whole night, right after beating the shit out of Hudson of course.

"Was nice to be a normal teenager for once." I admitted, and Ryker wrapped his arms around my waist from you. "Its about time you two got back together, we've all been waiting." Alessandra stated.

We both rolled our eyes, and Ryker handed Alessandra the keys to the skyline. "Here. Don't crash it." Ryker warned. "Thanks." Alessandra said, "I'll leave you two to it. See you later."

Ally left, shutting the door behind her. Ryker whirled me around, so I faced him and picked me up to set me on the counter.

He pressed his lips against mine, as his hands slid from my hips and tugged on the shirt I was wearing before he pulled it off.

Breaking away, Ryker pressed his lips to my neck and I closed my eyes shut. "Ryk..." I said, biting my lip "We can't I have a shoot today."

"Yes we can." He whispered, putting his forehead against mine. "No." I shook my head, "Not working doesn't give me money."

Ryker frowned at me. "As much as I'd love to make out with you all day, I have to go." I said, putting a hand on his cheek.

He clasped his hands around my wrist and pecked my lips "I Love you." "I love you too." I smiled, sliding off the counter and pulling on a shirt with jeans.

"See you later?" He asked, and I nodded, "I'll call you after the shoot. Maybe we could go out for dinner or something." I said, finishing off tying my Converses before walking out.

# Chapter 23

"Let's go Thompson!" Craig yelled as I was currently dead on the floor, questioning my life and human existence right now.

"Craig, this is really unnecessary," Liz breathed, already out of breath as she plopped down on the ground. "Yes it is." He shot her a glare, "Rain get up."

I sighed, forcing myself to get up from the ground. Today Craig decided to ruin my life..again. Since Ryker and Craig got into a fight, Craig is taking it out on me.

"You're going to fight against, Vince." He said, and Vince's eyes widened. "I'm not fighting Rain, Craig." He shook his head.

"Oh yes you are. And if you don't fight properly, you'll be giving me laps." Craig ordered, and Vince shook his head as he stood up. Vince held up his fist; getting into position.

We Both circled the mat, and neither of us would throw punches. "Throw a punch!" Craig ordered, Vince. Vince went to throw one but quickly stopped.

"I can't do this! Rain's like a sister to me!" Vince exclaimed, and I took a moment to catch my breath. "Fine." Craig crossed his built arms, "Charles"

Craig decided that everyone needed better training, so apparently he got a bunch of ex-military and gang members that helped them out with finding me to come out.

Charles came up, and I froze at how built he was. He had tanned skin, dark brown eyes, and soft brown hair with a bandana tied around his forehead.

His bicep is the size of my head...

"Alright. Go!" Craig shouted and Charles took no time before he went to tackle me. I quickly ducked, before pushing myself up and going to send a kick to his jaw but he caught my ankle.

He flipped me around by turning my ankle and he pinned my back up against his chest. I was put in a headlock, and struggled to get out of his grip.

I gripped his arm that was wrapped around my neck and elbowed him in the gut; resulting in him flinching in a bit. I walked backwards; forcing him to be pushed up against the wall only to kick my feet up onto the pole and flip myself around.

I got out of his grip and he sent a punch to my face, but I ducked again. Kicking him in the shin; I made him lose balance and put him in headlock.

I kneed him repeatedly where it counted. He wrapped his hands around my arm, and pulled so I was flipped over his shoulder and punched in the side before being thrown onto the ground.

My head smacked against the mat, and I clutched the side of my stomach where I was punched. "Back off," A voice gritted, and I looked to see Ryker shove Charles back.

Charles gave a look at Craig, and Craig nodded. Charles sent a punch right to Ryker, and Ryker dodged it. They started to get into a fist fight; which exactly what Craig wanted.

I quickly stood up and got in between them when Ryker was about to throw a punch. "Rain, move." He gritted, "Ryk, by fighting with him; you're giving Craig what he wants."

Ryker didn't even look at me, but instead held a glare at Charles. "You fucking touch her again, and you'll be on the ground crying for forgiveness."

"Ryker." I pulled on his hand, but he wouldn't budge. I sighed, and walked back up behind him only to wrap my arms around his neck loosely.

He became less tense, and his gaze snapped to me. He took my hand and led me into the kitchen. Ryker picked me up, and I flinched in pain as he set me down on the counter.

"Whats wrong?" He asked concerned, and I put a hand on my side, "Nothing. I just took a hit to my side stomach." Liz, Alessandra, Juliet, and Celeste all came in.

"Take your shirt off." He said, and I shook my head "No I'm fine." I went to get off the counter when Ryker grabbed me and pushed my shirt up. "Oh my God." He whispered, his eyes widening.

"Whats wrong?" Juliet asked concerned. Ryker blinked slowly but then clutched his fist and clenched his jaw, "I'm going to kill him."

I grabbed his hand quickly, before he had the chance to leave the kitchen. "Ryk, I'm fine." I assured, lacing my fingers with his.

"Rain he punched-" Ryker started, his voice rising with anger. "I can take a punch." I cut him off, "I learned how to deal with it, especially with being with Archer and Zeke."

He tensed up at my words,,"You shouldn't have too." "And you shouldn't beat up every guy that looks, talks, or touches me." I narrowed my eyes at him.

"But you're mine," He whispered, placing his forehead against and my lips tugged up in a small smile.

~ ~ ~ ~

The doors opened, making my head snap over to see Leah walk in. "Hey," Peter greeted her, as he took her coat for her and hung it up in the closet.

"Hey," Leah mumbled, setting her things down. "How was the doctor's appointment?" Celeste asked curiously. "Oh yeah, how was that?" I asked.

Ryker combed his fingers through my hair as I laid across the couch, with my head in his lap. "Oh it was okay.." Leah sighed.

Leah had a doctor's appointment today to for a check up on the baby and I couldn't believe she was already 16 weeks pregnant with the baby bump noticeable.

"Well it looks like she's doing fine." Leah shrugged, and I shot up along with the rest of the girls. "She?!" I exclaimed, "It's a girl!?"

Leah's lips tugged up into a smile before breaking out into a grin. I hugged her tightly, "Oh My Gosh I'm so happy for you."

Tears pricked her eyes as everyone hugged her tightly. Reece and Ryker both were in complete shock with mixed expressions that I couldn't read. "We're going to be uncles..." They bother whispered under their breath.

Leah bit her lip and became tense as everyone stared at them. "Oh My God, Sis." Reece broke the silence, hugging Leah tightly. I looked over at Ryker, and he clenched his jaw; rubbing it with his index finger and thumb.

He then dropped his hand to his side, pulling Leah into a tight hug, "Congrats Le."

My lips tugged up into a smile which I held back by biting my lip. I knew he was going to crack, because Ryker Anderson couldn't stay mad at people he loved.

* * * * *

"Rain." There was a knock at the door before it opened. "Kinda showering here," I rolled my eyes, making sure the shower curtain was closed.

"Did you ever keep a diary?" Ryker questioned, making my eyes widen in response. I quickly shut off the faucet of the shower, and grabbed a towel to wrap around myself.

Stepping out, Ryker my old diary in his hands with smirk plastered across his face. "Ryker, give it back!" I went to reach for it but he quickly moved his hand away.

He then gave me a pouting face "But Babe, I thought we weren't keeping secrets from each other." "Ryker Xavier!" I warned, shooting him a glare.

He flipped through the pages, "Very interesting freshman Rain." I went to grab it, but he quickly moved and walked out of the bathroom; going into my room.

I quickly walked out after him and tried to get it back as he continually flipped and skimmed over pages intently.

I went to grab the book, but Ryker caught my wrist; clasping his hand around it. His smirk grew wider, and he pulled me closer to him, and I kept a cold glare towards him.

Ryker leaned in towards my ear, whispering seductively "Drop the towel," as he tugged on the white towel that was wrapped around my naked body.

His peppermint hit my neck, and I looked up to meet his eyes. Biting my lip, I gripped his shirt in my hand, crumpling up.

Taking his left hand, I placed it to my lower back and whispered into his ear, "You're a perv," then pulling back to run away but Ryker grabbed me by the waist.

I was picked up off the ground only to be thrown over his shoulder. "Ryker!" I shrieked; trying to keep the towel from following. He dropped me down onto my bed, and he leaned over me.

He kissed down my jawline, and I closed my eyes shut as I clutched his shirt in my hands; pulling him closer to me. He moved further down, and I bit my lip to keep a moan from escaping.

Ryker then stopped up and his eyes looked up to meet mine "Still want to be a tease?" "Fuck off," I scoffed, smacking his arm.

Pushing him off me, I got up and walked into my closet. Quickly getting changed into a white v-neck t-shirt, denim ripped jeans, and a leather jacket; Ryker called "Hey Rain!"

"Yeah?" I asked, drying my hair as I walked out of my closet room. "You want to have dinner with my mom tonight?" He asked, scratching the back of his neck.

"W-what?" I choked, my eyes widening. Yeah, I met Arena; but not with Ryker around. "Y-You want me to meet your mom?"

"You've already met her," He rolled his eyes at me, "She's been taking care of Melanie and Faith lately, and I think she wants custody back from Leah...so we're all going over."

"We're?" I questioned, cocking an eyebrow at him. "We're..as in We are," He gave me a 'duh' expression. "I know," I rolled my eyes, "Who's we?"

"Leah, Reece, Faith, and Melanie." Ryker shrugged. My door then bursted open, and I looked to see my brothers.

"Don't you knock?" I crossed my arms, giving an annoyed look.

"We shouldn't have to, because if we did that means you would be doing something you're not suppose to be doing. When you're doing something you're not doing something, you want privacy; therefore you want people to knock before entering. If no knocks, you'll be doing what you're not suppose to be doing and will end up hell because you're 18. 18 years old aren't married; well you're not, and if you're not married pre-sex marriage is wrong. Therefore you'll end up in hell." Joel rambled, and everyone blinked slowly.

"You don't even believe in the whole no pre-sex marriage thing," I rolled my eyes at Joel; somehow following what he just said. "Well I do when it's for my little sister," Joel narrowed his eyes at me.

"What do you guys want?" I sighed, uncrossing my arms. "We have been ordered to ask if homework is done, or else you're grounded," Jax stated.

"I'm 18...is grounding seriously still a thing..?" I trailed off, trying to think of the last time I was actually grounded. "As long as you're under this roof, you can be punished with whatever," Jax rolled his eyes at me.

"Yeah okay, well homework is done. You can leave now," I narrowed my eyes at them.

* * * * * *

"How about this one?" Faith asked, walking out of the dressing room in a black crop top with a white skater skirt that flowed out with silver sparkly heels.

"Faith," I narrowed my eyes at her "Your brothers are going to kill me if I let you wear that." She pouted, "But Rain, everyone wears stuff like this."

"I know, I was a 15 once; I know how it is with the trends but I don't think your brothers care about fashion style," I pointed out, and Faith sighed.

"Ok, I'll buy it for you; but if your brothers get mad it's on you," I stated, narrowing my eyes. "Thanks Rain," She chuckled, pulling me into a hug.

Faith had some fancy date tomorrow with this guy who's parents are extremely rich; and she needed clothes to wear to the event or whatever.

Faith walked back into the dressing room to get changed, and I looked over out the store window to see a little girl crying as she sat on a bench.

Knocking on Faith's dressing room door, "Faith, I'll be right back." Heading out of the store, I went up to the little girl.

She had blond caramel long hair that was put in a french braid. She had bright hazel eyes that were filled with tears and was in a dress that went to her knees.

"Hey sweetie," I said softly, kneeling down to her height, "Where's your mommy?"

"I don't know," She cried, looking at me with tears streaming down her cheeks. She looked about 3 or 4, and I knew those eyes from somewhere.

"What's your name?" I asked her softly as she looked down at her lap. "Phoenix," She mumbled quietly, sniffling.

"Well that's pretty," I offered her a small smile, "I'm Rain. Come on, I'll help you find your parents." Phoenix slowly raised her head to look at me "My daddy knows a girl named Rain."

"Well I guess other people have that name too," I chuckled. "Phoe (Feen)!" A voice yelled, and my head whipped down the mall to see who was yelling.

Phoenix got up and ran towards the guy who had yelled her name. He immediately picked her up; hugging her tightly as he shut his eyes closed shut, "Oh thank God, you're alright."

"W-what?" I choked, blinking slowly as I stood up straight. His hazel eyes snapped over to mine, "Rain..What are you doing here?"

"You have a kid?" I managed to get out before he tried to change the subject. "Rain please...just let me explain," He sighed. "You're a father?!" I exclaimed in complete shock.

"Rain-" He started, shifting Phoenix to his side. "I can't believe you!" I snapped, shaking my head in disgrace as I started to walk away.

My arm was grabbed; whirling me around to face him. "Please just let me explain," He begged as his eyes softened.

"James...You tried to sleep with me! And then you tried to get me to break up with Ryker so that we could be together, when you have a kid and wife-" I started to ramble.

"Rain, I'm not married nor am I dating anyone," James sighed; making me become silent as I pressed my lips in a tight line. Another girl came up who was about my age with bleach blond hair and soft brown eyes, "You found Phoenix."

"Um Eden can you just take Phoneix for a minute?" James asked the girl and she nodded slightly before taking Phoenix and walking away.

"I'm sorry I didn't tell you-," He ran a hand through his hair, "I didn't want the chance that we had to be ruined. " "James," I shook my head "We never had a chance, we never will."

"Well look..4 years ago, remember Athena?" He asked, and I nodded in response. Athena was a girl; James was always on and off with, and never were serious.

"Well one night she came to my house in tears because some guy broke her heart. One thing led to another; I found out she was pregnant and she threatened me not to say anything. Athena moved to Washington to live with her grandmother and I was told I wasn't allowed to see Phoenix ever. I got joint custody two years ago once I graduated but I only had Phoenix during summer, since I moved to South Carolina and Athena was still in New York....When I came to New York a couple weeks ago; Athena came to the hotel room I was staying in; drunk of her ass. I took Phoenix and kicked her out, because I didn't want Phoenix to be around her.."

Taking everything in; I was frozen dumbstruck. "Rain," A voice spoke up and Faith came over with a shopping bag in her hand. "I-I gotta go," I stuttered, taking Faith's forearm and pulling her down the mall.

"Rain!" James called after me, but I continued walking ahead without looking back.

* * * * *

Knocking on the door we waited for someone to answer. "Is it normal to be nervous about having dinner with your boyfriend's mom who hasn't seen him in 12 years?" I questioned, biting my lip.

The door then opened to Ms Anderson, and she grinned "Rain, I'm so glad you could make it." She pulled me into a quick hug and I offered a small smile "Hey Arena."

She then hugged Faith and we walked in. "I really am glad you could make it, I'm sure you're busy with graduation coming up soon." I nodded slightly, smiling "Thanks for inviting me."

Ryker came in, coming up and pecking my lips "Hey." "Ryk, I need to talk to you," I whispered, and he blinked slowly as worry came over his face.

"Uh hey ma, Rain and I will be right back," Ryker informed before grabbing my hand and pulling me out of the apartment that Arena has been renting. We got out the hallway, and Ryker asked "What's wrong?" As he closed the door behind him.

"James has a daughter.." I sighed, running a hand through my hair. "What?" He asked confused. "James. James Landlock..he has a three year daughter named Phoenix," I explained.

"Poor kid," Ryker said and I smacked his arm "Ryker! This is serious!" He grabbed my wrist in his hands, "Rain, it doesn't involve you. I know you like making yourself involved with other people's lives, but him having a kid doesn't have anything to do with you; unless its your kid."

I narrowed my eyes at him, as if he was accusing me of Phoenix being my kid. "That's what I thought. Now can we not worried about this for now?" He cocked an eyebrow at me.

~ ~ ~ ~

"Oh Rain, please, just sit down and relax," Arena said, taking the dish I was washing out of my hands. Leah chuckled "Mom, Rain has a tendency to always be do something."

"I do not," I scoffed, rolling my eyes at her. "Tell me about it," Ryker rolled his eyes as he walked into the kitchen "I swear she has ADHD."

"Says Mr. Bipolar," I shot back and his lips tugged up into a small smirk "I was just kidding Rain," he left a kiss on my forehead.

"So Rain, I heard you have graduation coming up?" Arena asked, and I nodded slightly "Yeah, two weeks."

It was crazy to think that I would be graduating High School in two weeks. It was bittersweet, and for some reason I didn't want to leave. Even though I never liked it, it just seemed to be the place where everything started.

Freshman year, I was getting use to not having my mom around. Sophomore year I met Tyson and my life went downhill. Junior year I was still dealing with things with Tyson and kept to myself. This year..I met the best people in my life all because my irresponsibility and leaving my books in a class.

"Wow, you're actually graduating.." Reece trailed off, "That makes me feel old." "You thinking about attending any colleges?" Arena asked curiously.

"Um.." I trailed off, "I haven't really thought about it." "I mean you have modeling that can keep you on your feet," Leah shrugged, setting the table.

"Yeah, I guess," I said shrugging "I just haven't thought about the future. I figure I'll just take one step at the time and see where it takes me."

"Well aren't you optimistic," Arena chuckled "It's good to think that way, everyone needs to see things like that."

Melanie came running into the kitchen; dressed in a disney princess elsa costume with a stormtrooper helmet and lightsaber. "Hey cutie," I chuckled, squatting down to her height.

"Hey Rain," She giggled, pushing her helmet up onto her head which revealed her bright blue eyes. Faith then came running into the kitchen, "Um some man is at the door..."

My eyes flickered up to Ryker's as him and Reece quickly walked out of the kitchen and to the front door.

"Something tells me this isn't going to be a nice family dinner," I mumbled to myself as I stood up.

# Chapter 24

Melanie came running into the kitchen; dressed in a Disney princess Elsa costume with a storm-trooper helmet and light-saber. "Hey cutie," I chuckled, squatting down to her height.

"Hey Rain," She giggled, pushing her helmet up onto her head which revealed her bright blue eyes. Faith then came running into the kitchen, "Um some man is at the door..."

My eyes flickered up to Ryker's as him and Reece quickly walked out of the kitchen and to the front door.

"Something tells me this isn't going to be a nice family dinner," I mumbled to myself as I stood up. I heard Reece begin to yell, and I walked out to see who it was.

Tyson...

His blue eyes snapped up to mine, a smirk tugged up at his lips that only screamed evil and trouble. "Hi sweetheart," He smirked, "I've missed you ever since you left."

Ryker grabbed him by the shirt and slammed him up against a wall in the hallway "Listen here Blix," Ryker gritted through his teeth.

"Ryker!" I yelled, walking out to the hall and trying to push him off Tyson, "Stop and let go." "What do you want Blix?" Reece asked, clenching his jaw and keeping my behind him.

"Rain," He stated,"Because you seemed to run off with her just a bit early and killed one of our members while you were at it."

My heart fell and breath hitched at the thought of Hayes. The guilt hit me and I blinked slowly while everything seemed to slow down.

"Hope you like being a murder, Thompson," Tyson pushed the guilt more and more "He died because of you, you ungrateful slutty bratty rich brat-"

Tyson was cut off when Ryker shut him up by sending a punch right to his face. "Ryker!" I yelled, trying to push him away but Tyson and him broke out to a full-fledged fist fight.

Reece tried to grab me back "Rain, no." I saw Leah and Faith at the doorway and Tyson sent a punch to Ryker's jaw followed by a cracking sound.

I got out of Reece's grip, running up to them and getting in the middle before someone got majorly hurt. They both then stopped, holding each others glares. "Rain, move," Ryker ordered, his eyes not tearing away from Tyson's.

"No," I said stern. Ryker's bright blue eyes snapped to mine "Move, so I can fucking hit him." "If you want to hit him, you have to hit me," I swallowed a lump in my throat.

Why I was standing up for Tyson, you might ask? I wasn't..I was just tired of all the fighting, and didn't want anyone getting hurt anymore.

"I'm not hitting you," He stared at me in disgrace like it was the most absurd thing he's ever heard me say. "Whipped Anderson.." Tyson tsked, making me face him.

"But if you won't hit her, I will," Tyson said and I couldn't react before his fist came in contact with my face which sent me stumbling back.

Everything became dizzy, and I couldn't see straight. Ryker caught me from falling right before my eyes closed and I blacked out.

* * * * *

"Mom?" I questioned, running inside the house in search for my mom. "Mom! I'm home!" I yelled, and I heard a giggle come from the kitchen.

Heading towards the kitchen, I saw my mom with a glass of red wine in her hand and a man beside her laughing. "Mom.." I trailed off, and her eyes snapped up to mine.

"Oh Rain," She smiled and the man cleared his throat. Her eyes snapped up to his then back at me, "Rain this is my boyfriend-,"

"What?" I cut her off, blinking slowly as it wasn't registering in my head. "We've been together for sometime now and-" She started, but I didn't want to bear the rest.

Grabbing my keys and jacket, I headed towards the door. She yelled repeatedly "Rain! Rain!"

"Rain, Rain," Another voice said. My eyes flung open and I sat up quickly. "Its just us," Reece and Leah said "You were tossing and turning in your sleep."

I touched my forehead, and flinched at the pain where I got hit. My eyes snapped to theirs "Where's Tyson?"

Reece clenched his jaw and he looked away for a moment as Leah became tense. "Guys!" I yelled, "Where is he?!" "He's in the hospital," Leah sighed.

"Where's Ryker?!" I asked concerned. "The prison.." Leah sighed. "What?!" I exclaimed, getting out of my bed.

"Rain calm down and will explain everything," Reece stated as I pulled on my leather jacket and tied my converses.

Leah grabbed my forearm to stop me, "Look, someone in the apartment complex called the cops. Ryker was handcuffed and so was Tyson but he was taken to the hospital first."

"But why are you so worried about Tyson?" Reece questioned. I gulped and tensed up "Alright," I sighed "I have to tell someone."

"Tyson came back to get revenge..but he came back with something.." I trailed off, and they both furrowed their eyebrows at me. "A sex tape," I breathed, running a hand through my hair.

Reece broke out into a coughing fit and Leah choked "A what?" "I was drunk..he took advantage of me, and recorded the whole thing, and I didn't find out to we broke up and he broadcasted it to the whole school," I explained.

"And you didn't want Ryker beating the shit out of him?" Reece asked confused, which earned a smack upside the head from Leah. "No because he would show it to Ryker, and that's the last thing I need," I sighed.

~ ~ ~ ~

Running into the police station, I started to run past the front desk when the lady stopped me, "I'm sorry miss, but you cannot go back there."

"Oh yes I can," I said "Sheriff Thompson is my father, and I don't think you want to get in trouble with him." She gulped, "Why don't you take a visitors pass?"

I faked a smile as she handed me a pass "Thanks for your cooperation." Pushing the doors open, I ran down the prison hallways.

I knew exactly where Ryker would be, and ran right to the cell. It was the cell that my dad always put him in, even when he first starting getting in trouble with the law.

I came to the cell and saw him sitting on the bench with his head against the wall as he stood up at the ceiling bored. "Ryker," I broke the silence; making his head snap to mine.

"Rain," He acknowledged as he stood up and walked over to the bars. "What the hell is wrong with you?!" I exclaimed.

He rolled his bright blue eyes at me, "Don't put this on me. Tyson is the one that fucking showed up!" "But you hit him first," I accused.

"Rain Eliza," A voice interrupted, making me whirl around to see my dad. "Dad, I didn't know you were working today," I breathed.

He clenched his jaw and placed the newspaper that he had rolled up in his hands down on the desk "I need to talk to you." Nodding slightly I looked back at Ryker and snapped my fingers before pointing at the bench "You. Sit down."

"Yes mom," He said sarcastically and rolled his eyes, going back to sit on the bench. My dad nodded his head over to his office, where I followed him in and he shut the door behind us.

"Rain look," My dad sighed running his hands through his hair "I'm really trying to get better and support you, but I don't support the decisions you make. Especially with Anderson, you have a future sweetheart and he's only dragging you back."

"Don't sweetheart me," I shook my head "Because he's not dragging me back." "Have you even thought about college?" He asked, "Graduations in two weeks."

Shifting in my spot, I crossed my arms "I don't know if I want to go.." "No," My dad shook his head "Its not that you don't want to go, its that you don't want to leave all your friends."

"I really don't think its for me. Plus everyone's already been accepted to colleges and I'll just stick with modelling," I shrugged.

"Don't do this," He sighed "You know this isn't right." Pressing my lips in a thin line, I glanced back outside the window then back at my dad "I'm bailing him out."

"Oh no you're not," He shook his head, picking up a pile of papers. "Yes I am. I'm 18 and have the money. I'm bailing him out."

"Rain, I said no." He narrowed his eyes at me. "As sheriff you have too," I stated, crossing my arms.

"And as your father, I don't have too," He pushed. "Yes but we're in a business place right now, and we don't want to bring the state into this, do we?" I tested.

He sent me a glare before handing me a pile of papers to fill out for information about Ryker and myself.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

"No Alex," I sighed as she gave me a lecture on my life decisions. Looking up from the ground to see Ryker walk out of the police station.

"I got to go, bye Alex," I mumbled before hanging up. I walked over to the driver's side and got in as Ryker got into the passenger seat with complete silence between us.

I turned the key in the ignition of my truck and drove off without a word being said. "Why are you mad?" Ryker broke the silence.

I looked over at him dumbstruck "Why am I mad? Oh I don't maybe because I just had to Bail my boyfriend out of jail."

"Tyson fucking started this!" He yelled, "If he didn't show up, I wouldn't have ended up in a jail cell!"

"You were still part of the situation!" I yelled. "Fucking grow up," Ryker groaned, rolling his eyes. "I'm 18, I shouldn't have to grow up!" I exclaimed.

"Well stop making me feel guilty for everything!" Ryker yelled, "Because thats all you do! You make me feel like I'll never be fucking good enough for you! So my deepest apologies for not being perfect, your highness!"

Slamming on my breaks, I pulled over to the side of the road. I looked over at Ryker with a glare, "You need to go and deal with whatever shit is going on, then come back and talk to me."

"Whatever," He rolled his eyes and got out of the truck as he slammed the door shut. He walked down some alleyway and I closed my eyes shut tightly.

Please tell me I did the right thing....

* * * * *

-Next Day-

"Alright if we pour this blue liquid in this red one it should make a fizz, right?" Shailene asked as I stared down at my notebook and phone.

"Earth to Rain," She snapped her fingers in front of my face, making me snap out of my gaze. "Uh yeah? Blue, red, fizz.." I trailed off.

"He's not going to call," Shae sighed as she took my phone and put on the other side of her. "But What if-" I started, yet was cut off by Shae "No 'buts' or 'what ifs' and definitely no 'But, what ifs'."

Rolling my eyes, our teacher Mr. Rifts came up "Miss Thompson, Miss Jergens, how's your project going?"

"Oh great Mr. R, yeah, just um..putting colors with colors to make that fizzy thing.." Shailene trailed off as she poured more liquid into a container. Mr. Rifts sighed "Read the directions ladies," before walking away.

My phone then started to go off and I jumped up as I grabbed my phone. "Hello?" I answered, not bothering to look who it was.

"Hey," Vince's voice said. "Oh..its you," I frowned, slumping in my seat in disappointment.

"Love you too," Vince said sarcastically. "Sorry, I was just hoping it'd be Ryk," I sighed. "He's at work right now. But anyways, you coming to the warehouse today?" He asked.

"Umm..wasn't planning on it," I trailed off as I sat up straight. "Well we're all going out for Will's birthday at some bar and restaurant downtown but dress nice."

"Will's birthday isn't for another two weeks..?" I questioned confused. "Yeah but we have your graduation, the guys are going back to Italy for a couple months, and have races coming up. So we're celebrating tonight."

"Right," I sighed "Well I'll be there tonight, Bye." Hanging up the phone, I saw a text message from Reece pop up on my phone.

Reece: You have any hot friends I can take to the club??

My lips tugged up to a smirk as I looked over to Shaliene "Oh Shae.." I said in a sing song voice "Would you like to go on a date tonight?"

"With who?" She asked, raising am eyebrow at me. "Reece Anderson," I stated. "What's he look like?" She asked, and I pulled out my phone to scroll through my camera roll to find a picture of Reece.

Her eyes went wide, "Hot damn.."

~ ~ ~ ~

"Hey, how you doing? Well I'm doing just fine. I lied I'm dying inside," I sang softly as I ran the razor up my legs.

"Rain!" A voice yelled, making me jump and cut near my leg with the razor. "Ow," I hissed in pain as I shut the water faucet off.

Once I got out of the shower, I dried myself off and quickly pulled on some clothes before I went downstairs. I slid down the staircase railing; keeping my balance until I jumped off.

My brothers and dad were in all gathered in the living room. "Whats going on?" I asked hesitantly, taking a seat on the couch.

"Well this came in the mail two days ago, and I know you don't think its a good idea but maybe this will change your mind," My dad sighed as he handed me a white envelope.

Raising my eyebrow, I ripped the seal open and pulled out the envelop that was addressed to me. Unfolding the paper, I scanned over it and the first sentence said "Columbia University and I, Mr. Watson am glad to announce that you have been accepted to CU."

My eyes went wide, I shot up, and covered my hand with my mouth "I got in?!" "Congrats sis," Joel smiled as he hugged me and which the rest of my brothers did.

My dad gave me a small smile "I knew you could do it, but you just gave up hope." "Oh my God.." I whispered, still in shock, "I actually got in.."

"Still don't want to go to college?" My dad asked, and I looked up at him. He pulled me into a hug, "Congrats Rain."

* * * * *

"ID's?" The security guard asked us as we came up to the club doors. I handed him my fake ID that said I was 21, and Shae did the same nervously. He examined them before nodding his head to the door.

I grabbed Shailene's wrist and pulled her into the club, "Don't act so nervous." "I'm sorry, I've never used a fake ID before," She narrowed her eyes at me.

Rolling my eyes at her, I spotted where the gang was sitting at a table. Reece's head snapped back to me and he got up from his seat before walking up. "Jesus.." Shae whispered under her breath, making me chuckle.

"Hey," Reece gave me a quick hug before looking at Shaliene. "Reece this is Shaliene..Shaliene this is Reece," I introduced them. "Please, just call me Shae," Shae offered a small smile.

"Well I'll leave you two to it," I smirked proudly as I started to walk away but Reece grabbed my hand and whispered into my ear "I really need to hang out with you and your friends more."

Walking over to everyone, "Ayyy Thompson!" Luca yelled in an Italian accent. "Well don't you look hot," Ally complimented as she moved seats so I had one.

I was in a black leather very mini skirt, a white tank top, and my black high top Converses. Sitting down in the seat, everyone was gathered around a table. "You get ID?" Neil asked, and I nodded.

Reece, Liz, Ally, Tate, Seb, Ryker, and I were all under aged to be in the club. I'm 18, Reece is 19, and everyone else is 20 but the rest of the gang was 21 and over.

"Let's go dance," Liz suggested as she grabbed my hand and pulled me to the dance floor. The rest of the girls followed behind as well, and I was pulled into a center of people.

"Alright, you and Ryker just got back together and you're acting like when you first met," Liz cocked an eyebrow at me and crossed her arms.

"I don't know..." I sighed, running a hand through my hair "We got into some argument and he told me to grow up and that I shouldn't be sticking up for Tyson."

Everyone's eyes went wide, and Alessandra pursed her lips together "You don't know?" "Know what?" I questioned, making them all look at each other in worry.

"Uh..." Celeste and Juliet trailed off uncomfortably. "Rain..Ryker's dad got out of prison, and wants custody of Melanie and Faith. On top of that he can't afford his meds, thats why his moods have been all over the place."

"W-What?" I suffered in complete shock. "You didn't know?" Juliet asked shocked, and I shook my head "No clue." "I'll be right back," I muttered before turning around and walking over to Ryker.

He was by the bar with some of the guys and I saw a girl with auburn hair try to flirt with him, as she bit her lip and twirled her hair around her index finger. Once I walked up, Ryker's eyes snapped up to mine.

"I need to talk to you," I said stern. The girl gave me a resting bitchy face, crossing her arms, and asking in a snobby tone "And you are?" "His girlfriend," I stated "Now I suggest you march yourself back to the hoe section and find some other one night stand."

Her jaw dropped and she scoffed at me. Rolling my eyes at her, I couldn't be bothered to deal with this right now. Grabbing Ryker's hand, I pulled him out of the club.

We walked over to the side of the building, and I whirled around to face him "You told me no more secrets, which is exactly what you're doing." "Goddamn it, Alessandra!" Ryker muttered under his breath "I'm going to kill her, I swear."

"Well I don't think its right that I find out about my own boyfriend by one of my friends instead of my OWN BOYFRIEND!" I exclaimed.

"Rain..." He rubbed his temples "Can we talk about this later?" "No, We're talking about this now or else you'll put it off," I stated stern and crossed my arms.

"Alright," He rolled his eyes at me "My dad apparently got out of jail and tracked down my mom...he wants custody of Faith and Melanie; but is an abusive alcoholic asshole..kinda like your dad."

I stomped on his foot at the comment he made and sent a glare. "My mom wants custody of Faith and Melanie too..but Leah has custody of both. But my father wants to track them down and kidnap them."

"What about your meds?" I asked, crossing my arms and shifting in my place. "I don't know Rain," He sighed, rubbing his face with his hands. The stress he was under was obvious, yet tried to hide it.

"How about you let me pay them?" I questioned, and his eyes snapped to mine "Yeah, no." "Why not?" I asked, cocking an eyebrow at him. "Because it's not your responsibility," He stated stern.

"Ryk," I sighed "As much as you want to put on this Bad Boy image, and you don't need help because you never got in when you were a kid, independence thing...Everyone needs help sometimes."

"Rain, I don't-" He started but I cut him off before he said anything else "How about this? You let me pay for the pills for a month until you get a few paychecks to get back on your feet."

He clenched his jaw and rubbed it with his thumb and index finger. His bright blue eyes flickered to the side before landing back to me "You're annoying, you know that?"

"Only for you," I gave him a cheeky smile and sent a wink.

* * * * *

"Rainy," A voice teased and I groaned "And right when I thought you forgot about that nickname." "You wish Rainy," Joel teased as he kissed my cheek and I slapped his arm.

My phone started to ring, and I looked down to see Alessandra on my screen. "What?" I answered, grabbing the grocery bags out of the cart and Joel did the same.

"Ironic. You and Ryker answer the phone the same way," Ally teased. I walked to my truck, through the parking lot of the grocery cart. "Gang trade meeting in five minutes, be here or get killed by Craig."

"Shit," I muttered under my breath as I started loading groceries into the tailgate of the truck "Ok, I'll be there soon." Hanging up, I quickly rushed Joel to get in.

"Why in I'm such a rush?" He asked as I started the engine and backed out of the parking spot before heading to the road and pressing down on the gas.

Joel quickly tightened his seat belt and grabbed the roof handle "Goddammit Rain! Slow down!" He exclaimed.

Rolling my eyes, I changed gears and took a sharp turn and ran a red light. "I would, but I preferably not like to get killed by Craig today," I said as I floored the gas and kept glancing back in my rear view mirror.

After speeding through town, I finally got to the warehouse and handed Joel my keys "Here, drive home. I'll get a ride from someone," I said hurriedly before running into the warehouse and sprinting up the steps.

"I'm here! I'm here!" I yelled as I pushed the door open to the main room and caught my breath before passing out on the couch next to Vince.

Ryker and Reece came in from the kitchen doors, and Ryker pecked my lips quickly before sitting down on the other couch that was across from me.

The whole gang was here, and Craig entered the room and sat down "Alright, well I've called this meeting because of everything going. There's been a lot of chaos, and we need to figure this all out."

Everyone just stayed silent for a moment and Craig cleared his throat "In the next two weeks; a lot is going to change. Dawson, Felix, Memphis, Augustus, Seb, Luca, Andre, Tate, Aaron, Levi, Abe, Juliet, and Celeste are going back to Italy for a little while."

My heart fell at those words even though I knew they were, it just hurt hearing it aloud and knowing it was happening true. I've grown close to all them and it's hard to say goodbye.

"I can't believe I'm saying this.." Craig sighed "But Rain's graduating." "Woohoo!" Liz hollered, cupping her hands over her mouth. I rolled my eyes and chucked a pillow at her.

"Wow," Neil spoke up "The young one is all grown up. I feel so damn old." "Well at least Ryker won't sound like Pedophile now when he says his girlfriends in High School," Peter smirked.

Ryker flipped him off, and everyone chuckled. "We have races coming up, Leah has appointments, and gang trade meetings," Craig listed "Now, I want everyone to say one thing about what they have coming up and will start with Aaron and end at Rain."

I gulped, and sat up straight. "Well the gang and I are, are heading back to Italy; so that's what were all focused on." Everyone then looked at Ally for he to go, and She gave a small smile.

"Well.." She trailed off "I've been looking for an apartment and job lately, because I'm going to stay in New York." My eyes lit up and my head snapped up to her "Wait seriously?!"

She smiled and nodded. "Oh my Gosh!" Liz gushed as she tackled Ally into a hug "I can't believe you didn't tell us." "I heard there's some on 12th street, you should go check one of the apartments out," Vince stated.

Alessandra nodded and looked at Leah who was next to her. "Well I have a doctor's appointment tomorrow at 3, and it's just a check up."

"I'm helping Liz find a new apartment," Peter stated for his turn. Liz was also looking for an apartment, and moving out of her mom's to be on her own now. "And I'm supervising Peter and Liz while they look for new apartments instead of banging," Will took a sip from his water.

"Neil and I are volunteering for some mechanic for now, and are searching for new parts to fix up a Ferrari we found in some junk yard that was beaten up pretty badly," Vince informed.

Everyone looked at Ryker, and he said "Busy with work, dealing with Callum and Arena."

That took me back for a second, as I've never heard Ryker address his parents by their first names before. "How about you Rain?" Craig asked; snapping me out of my thoughts.

"Oh," I gulped silently as I fidgeted with my fingers "I..I um..-.." Everyone's were on me as they all gave confused looks, waiting for me to continue.

Taking a deep breath "I'm going to college." Ryker's eyes snapped right up to mine as they went dark and everyone stated at me in shock.

# Chapter 25

Everyone looked at Ryker, and he said "Busy with work, dealing with Callum and Arena."

That took me back for a second, as I've never heard Ryker address his parents by their first names before. "How about you Rain?" Craig asked; snapping me out of my thoughts.

"Oh," I gulped silently as I fidgeted with my fingers "I..I um..-.." Everyone's were on me as they all gave confused looks, waiting for me to continue.

Taking a deep breath "I'm going to college." Ryker's eyes snapped right up to mine as they went dark and everyone stated at me in shock.

"You what?" Leah asked, and I blinked slowly a few times before answering "Yeah..I got an acceptance letter from Columbia University."

"Oh my God," Celeste spoke out "Rain, that's amazing. Congrats." "Yeah, thanks," I nodded slightly before I looked at Ryker. He stood up from the couch, grabbing his keys, and storming out of the room.

I immediately stood up, starting to follow after him when Ally grabbed my hand "Just let him cool off a bit." "No," I shook my head. "Ryker!"

I ran out of the warehouse and he was walking towards his truck. "Ryker, wait!" I yelled and he whirled around to me before snapping "What?"

"Don't do this," I sighed "I already feel guilty about it." He looked back at me with dark eyes that sent daggers into me "You're not seriously going, are you?" He asked, staring at me with intensity. "I mean, I don't know" I shrugged "And I need to get out of the house for awhile."

I was really split in the middle about college. Sometimes I think it'd be a great idea then other times I think it's a nightmare in the making.

Ryker walked up to me and we were inches apart. "Rain, You have your brothers, the gang, me and so many other fucking things..plus Leah and Liz wouldn't have anyone to annoy if you left."

"Well getting an education is better than being someone for Liz and Leah to annoy." I stated, and he asked with a harsh tone "What field do you even want to go in?"

"I don't know yet..something with kids, maybe a therapist" I shrugged again, not knowing what field I wanted to go into.

"You shouldn't go" Ryker scoffed, shaking his head, going to walk back to his truck but I grabbed his hand before he left. "Well it's not really your decision" I said, as his back was towards me.

"It's a waste of time. You go to school for four more years, pay loans, take long-ass boring classes with annoying professors, then are in debt for the next 15 years," Ryker said with anger rising in his voice.

"I'm not worried about the student loans and if I want a good job besides exploiting myself from modeling I'm going to have to sit through those 'long-ass boring classes with annoying professors'," I said getting annoyed at how he was trying to push the idea down.

"Why the hell would you leave?!" He exclaimed as he turned around to face me "You have your family and friends! People who love you Rain! And you're just going to pack your bags, go to college, and leave everyone behind?!"

Running a hand through my hair, I exclaimed "It's not up to you!" "I know!" Ryker yelled "Because if it was you wouldn't be wasting your life away with frat parties and un-important information!"

"Just because you didn't go to college doesn't mean I don't have to!" I yelled, and Ryker glared at me "Fine. Go to CU, see what I care!"

My heart fell at his words and I blinked slowly a few times. "You knew I would go to college eventually!"

"No Rain! No I didn't! Because I never thought about you leaving!" He yelled "And don't come crying to me when you're stuck in some fucked-up situation! Cause that's what college does, it fucks things up!"

"Why are you so upset about this?!" I exclaimed with my voice softening from yelling and I stared at him, waiting for an answer.

"Because I love you!" He yelled "And I don't want you to leave!"

I froze and my body relaxed from being so tense. I took a deep breath and took in what he said. He shook his head as he looked off to the side "Rain," He sighed.

Ryker looked back at me, and came closer to me. "Ryk-" I began but was cut off by him "Move in."

"W-What?" I stuttered from being taken off guard. "Move in with me. You won't have get a dorm, you'll be out of your house-" He started.

"Ryker." I stopped him "This is a lot to think about." "Rain, you're practically at my place 24/7 anyways," He continued "It just makes sense."

"Ryk..." I trailed off "What happens if we get into a fight? Plus you already have Melanie and Faith that come over..There's Just not enough space."

* * * * *

"Moving?!" They all exclaimed, shooting up from their seats. "Yes, okay." I sighed "I didn't want to get into another fight, and maybe this will actually work out."

"Oh my gosh!" Ally and Liz gushed "Congrats! We're looking for apartments now." "What? No!" Leah and Juliet disagreed.

"Rain is way to young to be moving in with her boyfriend," Leah shook her head as she rested her hands on her hips "ESPECIALLY my brother."

I buried my face in my hands as they all broke out into an argument. "She is not Leah! This is a good thing for them!" Liz exclaimed.

"It is not," Juliet popped in "They are moving way too fast. They just got back together, plus she needs to focus on college." "Oh hush!" Ally rolled her eyes "They'll be married in the next few months."

My head snapped up and I shot up "Whoa! Whoa! I never said anything about marriage." "Exactly!" Leah exclaimed "You're suppose to do the moving in part after the marriage part."

"And you're suppose to be with someone, married before getting pregnant," Liz snapped and Leah sent her a glare. "Incase you all haven't noticed, none of us are traditional." Ally rolled her eyes at everyone.

"Rain," Leah sighed, turning to face me "You're making a huge mistake." "No you're not," Liz cut in "Don't listen to Leah."

"He's my brother! I know him, and I know what is going to happen," Leah continued stern. "Well he's my best friend," Ally crossed her arms "And I know just as much as you."

Leah; his older sister is telling me no. Ally; his best friend is telling me yes. Not conflicting at all...

"Oh puh-lease," Leah rolled her eyes "Don't even pull that card. You know that Rain is making a huge mistake by agreeing to this. She's too young." "She's 18! She's a legal adult! She can vote; not that anyone would want to in this election."

"Guys!" I yelled over all of them, making them become silent and look at me. "It's my decision, not yours," I breathed "And whether you support it or not, I don't want you all arguing about it."

It was the morning, and I was getting ready to go to school but stopped by the warehouse. The doors then opened and the guys walked in.

"Rain, let's go." Ryker said grabbing his keys "I have to drop you off then go to work." I quickly slipped my Convereses on and slung my backpack over my shoulder. I took his hand and he intertwined our fingers as we walked out of the warehouse.

"I just want school to be over," I sighed and let go of his hand to get in the passenger seat. "You have one more week," He rolled his eyes at me and I threw my head back against the seat.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

"Rain," He broke away for a second and managed between kisses "You have school." "That can wait," I whispered before pressing my lips back to his.

I straddled his lay, and he rested his hands on my hips and they pushed my uniform skirt further and further up. My tongued slid across his teeth, and my hand slid down his chest as I started to tug at the bottom of the old stained muscle tee he had on for work.

I came to the last button, and his hands pushed my skirt up completely. The bell then went off, and Ryker pulled back from me "You're going to be late." I caught my breath and pouted at him.

I crawled out of lap, grabbing my backpack, and getting out of the car. "Love you," I said squeezing his hand.

"Love you too," He replied and let go of my hand.

The second bell went off and I jogged into school before Mrs. Grave; the principal writes me up for being a second late

~ ~ ~ ~

"Wow Rain, Wow," Shae rolled her eyes at me. "I forgot alright," I said as I forged my dad's signature onto the paper "Plus it's stupid that I need a signature anyways, I'm 18."

Today was the senior 'field trip' which was only basically a day to 'learn about the history of New York City,' but honestly we had to sit through an educational tour of the old Library, then they let us go off and do whatever.

We walked up to the bus and I handed Mrs. Grave our principal my permission slip and she gave me a fake tight smile. I continued on and walked into the bus as Shailene followed behind me.

"I haven't been on a bus in a forever," I admitted and walked towards the bus where I sat in a seat and a guy that was in front of Shailene and I pulled Shae down into his seat with a smirk on his lips.

She looked back me with her eyebrows rose. "I'm gonna tell Reece," I winked at her and her eyes went wide. Apparently Reece and Shae hit off and are suppose to be going on a date again soon.

"Hey Thompson," A voice greeted cockily and I looked up to see Hudson Kai aka my prom date sit down next to me. "This seat is taking," I glared. "By whom?" He questioned.

"The air," I said and he frowned "Come on, Babe. We're not still mad about prom night, are we?" He placed a hand on my thigh and pushed my skirt further up, as he went to press his lips to my neck, but I pushed him off me.

"Fuck off Kai," A voice gritted and my eye's snapped up to Blake "Leave Rain alone or I'm getting Coach." Hudson rolled his eyes "Cockblock," then getting up and moving to another seat.

"This seat taken?" Blake asked. "Well air is kinda taken up the space..but I guess," I shrugged sarcastically. He chuckled before sitting down next to me "Look, I'm really sorry about Hudson, he's an asshole."

"It's just one more week of school, I think I can make it through without castrating him," I breathed. "Speaking of which, you and the gang doing anything the 10th?" He asked. "Not that I know of. Why?" I cocked an eyebrow at him.

"Well my parents are throwing me a graduation party by force, and they told me to invite a lot of people and I'm not talking to many people anymore..so I was wondering if you wanted come? But I know Anderson would not let you go by yourself, so I just figured the whole gang could come," He explained

"Smart," I laughed "Yeah, I'll check with them." "So you and Anderson back together, I heard?"

"Yeah," I nodded "Actually going to find an apartment and move on together once graduations over an everything." "Oh wow," He said shocked "You sure you're only dating?"

Rolling my eyes at him "Dating Couples or whatever, move in with each other all the time." "Yeah But not at 18," He narrowed his eyes at me and I smacked his arm "Don't need the lecture, Monroe."

"So when's the baby due?" He asked, and my eyes snapped towards his. "Excuse me?" I choked. "Oh come on Rain, 18 and 20 year olds don't move in with each other unless they have too."

"You're right," I sighed "How'd you know I was pregnant?" "Wait, seriously?!" He exclaimed, his eyes going wide.

"Shh!" I hushed, putting a hand over his mouth "No one knows yet." "You're pregnant?!" He whisper yelled.

"Yes! I thought you knew, because you just said you did!" I exclaimed. "I was kidding! Oh my God, you're seriously pregnant?!" He asked with his eyes as wide as the sinkhole in Manhattan.

"Shh!" I looked around, making sure no one was listening or else it would be an absolute nightmare. "How far along are you?" He asked, and I sighed, running a hand through my hair "Few weeks."

"I always said you'd be the first to get pregnant right out of High School..well in the end of High School," Blake admitted and my jaw dropped "What?!" "Just saying," He put his hands up in surrender.

"Well I'm not," I rolled my eyes at him. "You're not pregnant?" He questioned confused, raising an eyebrow at me. "No!" I scoffed "I was only joking with you. And if you say that I am to anyone, I will slit you."

"Ok," He nodded and turned straight in his spot, but turned back to face me "Are you sure you're not pregnant?" "Positive," I stated and he narrowed at his eyes at me "So you are pregnant?"

"I'm not," I narrowed my eyes "I'm on my last day of my period, if you must know." "Ok, didn't need to know that," Blake stated and flinched at my words in disgust. "Well you asked," I breathed and pulled out my phone.

"It's not the time or place to be sexting your boyfriend," Blake mimicked one of our teachers in a high pitch voice and I smacked his arm "It's my brother."

"Tell Reece I said hey," He said casually as he pulled out his phone as well and I looked up at him confused. "Reece isn't my brother.." I trailed off, furrowing my eyebrows together.

"-In law," Blake finished as he gave me a duh look "You never specified what type of brother." "Yeah okay," Sarcasm filled my tone as I rolled my eyes at him again. "You're not brightest crayon in the box, you know that?" He glanced at me then went back to typing on his phone.

"It's 'cray-on' not 'crown'," I corrected as I returned his You're-dumb-as-fuck look. "Fight me Thompson, it's crayon-" He defended while pronouncing it as 'crown'.

"Listen up!" Principal Grave yelled over the bus we were in, and there was probably about 38 buses because of how big the senior class was. "As seniors, we are trusting you all too go off by yourself, but if you use the power to disadvantage-You're going to be big trouble. Now remember you're wearing a uniform, which means you're representing our school. Don't mess it up."

~ ~ ~

Our tour guide went on and on about some plantation that use to be located in the place we were standing right now. "Don't you just love learning about a field of grass," Blake whispered to me, as he stood with his arms crossed. "It's a blast," I commented back sarcastically as I rubbed my hands up and down my arms.

It was a bit chilly outside today, and I was smart enough to not bring a jacket with me because mines sitting in my truck. "And that's how New York built up, to be the amazing place it is today," Our tour guide finished.

"Thank God," Shae groaned "It's over." We all then started walk off our separate ways and I quickly texted Ryker.

Me: You still in work??

"So where first?" Shae linked her arm through mine as we walked. "Hungry?" I questioned and she narrowed her eyes at me "I'm always hungry."

My phone buzzed and I looked to see Ryker texted me back.

Ryker Asshole Anderson: 20 minutes. Why?

Me: Want to grab lunch when you get out?

Ryker Awhile Anderson: Yeah, sure.

"I can't believe you're moving in with each other," Shae grinned at me, as we walked over to the street. "At least you support it, I have his sister on my back about it saying it's a horrible idea, and when the guys found out..they're going to flip."

"Yikes," She gave me a sympathetic face "You think Craig is going to flip?" My eyebrows shot up just from thinking about it "Craig takes any chance he has to be mad at me; he's going to flip, because he already hates that we're together."

"Taxi!" I yelled and waved a hand, which quickly made a taxi pull over to the side. I opened the backseat door and slid in, with Shae following behind me.

~ ~ ~ ~

Opening the front door of the mechanic's office, I saw Vince talking to a man in a tux with a tie, and a shiny gold Rolex watch on his wrist that caught my eye.

The man shook his head "I'm calling my lawyer, then will talk." He stormed out of the office, and I asked "What was that about?"

Vince's eyes snapped up to mine and he looked taken back "Nothing. Why are you here?" "School field trip. So Shae, Ryker, and I are going out for lunch. Wanna come?"

"Can't. I have a shift till 2, but thanks for the offer," Vince stated and took a wet paper towel and rubbed off some of the oil on his hands "And Hey Shae."

"Hey," She gave a slight smile. The doors then opened and Ryker came out with black grease and oil all over him. He was in a black nirvana muscle tee that showed off his biceps, black joggers, with a grease on his cheek, hands, and clothes.

An older guy was beside him talking as Ryker wiped his hands off with a wet paper towel. Ryker nodded at the man, "I just need to replace the gasket and tires. You can pick it up tomorrow."

The man said something else before leaving the office, and Ryker came over to me. Placing a peck on my lips,

he asked "Want to tell me why you're skipping school?" "I'm not skipping," I rolled my eyes at him "Senior field trip today."

"Mhm, okay Rain," He didn't believe me. "Yes because I love voluntarily wearing my uniform," I narrowed my eyes at him as I went over to the water dispenser and poured water into a small cup.

"I don't know. You could be into some weird kinky shit," Ryker commented then slapping my ass. I whirled around and slapped him across the cheek. Vince and Shae laughed in amusement. "I'd believe it if she started calling you 'daddy'," Vince commented with a smirk.

"Ew!" I scrunched my nose in disgust, before reporting sarcastically "Yes, because I'd definitely call people 'daddy'."

The doors opened to reveal Reece walk in with Melanie on his hip. Shae became tense and her face flushed. "Rain," Melanie chirped and she put her hands out to me. I took her from Reece and kissed her forehead "Hey Kiddo."

"Hey," Reece breathed before sending Shae a small smile and directly saying hi to her. "Hey," She gave a small smile back, and became less tense. "What are you doing here?" Vince asked Reece as he fist pounded him.

"Just stopping by, I'm dropping Melanie off at my mom's," Reece shrugged. "Hey, you know what you should do?" I cut in, making Reece look at me "You should take

Shae to the pizza restaurant down the street, show her what a real New York pizza is."

Reece looked at Shae with an eyebrow raised "What do you say?" "Sounds great," Shae nodded slightly and I put Melanie down on the ground before she ran over to Reece. Reece picked Melanie up and took Shae's hand, before they walked out.

"Use protection!" I shouted after them; making Vince and Ryker snicker. "Ready?" I asked Ryker, and he sighed "Yeah, just let me go throw some different clothes on."

~ ~ ~ ~

"Johnny Cash? Really?" I narrowed my eyes at him and raised an eyebrow. "Yes, Johnny Cash," Ryker rolled his eyes at me with a glance before turning back to the road.

"No, no, He's a legend. I grew up listening to him, you just didn't strike me as a Johnny Cash fan," I corrected, because no one hates on Johnny Cash. "Metallica, Led Zeppelin, ACDC, GNR, Nirvana.." I trailed off as I went through all of the old CD's I found in Ryker's truck.

We pulled up to the restaurant that was an old coffee shop diner that I use to come to with my mom. Ryker parked, and we both got out and walked inside.

I tightened my leather jacket around me and we were greeted by a waitress. "How many?" She asked, and I stated "Two." She nodded slightly as she grabbed menus and led us to a booth.

I slid in one side and Ryker slid into the other. "I'm Brooke, I'll be your waitress for day. Can I start you off with something to drink?" "I'll have a Samuel Adams beer-" Ryker started, but I kicked him from underneath the table and sent him a warning look.

"Will take two cokes," I gave the girl a tight smile. She nodded before walking away, and I turned to Ryker "You're under-aged dipshit." "I've been drinking since I was 14 maybe 13 Rain," He narrowed his eyes at me.

"Yeah, Craig did a great job raising you," I muttered under my breath as I scanned through the menu. "You know what you're getting?" I asked, closing my menu.

"Not yet. You?" He raised an eyebrow. "Pizza and fries, my mom and I would always get it when we came here. Kind of a ritual," I shrugged.

"Your mom's name is Hale, right?" He asked and I nodded "Yep, Hale Elizabeth." Ryker chuckled under his breath, before his eyes met mine.

"What?" I asked confused. "Nothing, it's just that your mom's name is Hale Elizabeth, and yours is Rain Eliza," Ryker explained. "Congratulations, you figured out how I got my name,"I said in a fake overjoyed tone.

I glanced over to see a man with dark brown eyes to the point where they looked black, salt and pepper hair, a built structure, and was about his late 50's. He sat alone and he was staring directly into me, with his hands crossed in a grip and elbows resting on the table. He wore a army green jacket, jeans, with a white t-shirt that had a badge on it, but I couldn't see what it said.

"Rain," Ryker snapped his fingers in front of me, making me snap out of my gaze and look at Ryker. "Something's wrong," I breathed "There's something about that man." "Rain, he's just an old guy eating. You're worrying again," Ryker shook his head at me.

"No Ryk-" I started but he reached across the table and grabbed my hands in his. "Rain," He stopped me with his eyes boring into mine "Nothing's going to happen."

You know that feeling in the bottom of your stomach where it feels like a pit, or the back of your head with the voice telling you something's wrong, or your muscles becoming tense and telling you to leave? Well I had that right now, and there was definitely something about that man.

# Chapter 26

"No Ryk-" I started but he reached across the table and grabbed my hands in his. "Rain," He stopped me with his eyes boring into mine "Nothing's going to happen."

You know that feeling in the bottom of your stomach where it feels like a pit, or the back of your head with the voice telling you something's wrong, or your muscles becoming tense and telling you to leave? Well I had that right now, and there was definitely something about that man.

The waitress came back with our drinks, and took our orders quickly. "You'd tell your dad about the whole moving out thing?" Ryker asked.

"Well.." I trailed off, spinning my drink around with my straw "Not exactly.." "Not exactly?" He questioned, cocking an eyebrow at me. "We talked about me moving out and getting an apartment with Liz..but I didn't exactly tell him about us yet.."

Ryker rolled his eyes at me and I defended "Hey! It's kinda hard to tell your dad that at 18 and still in High School you're moving in with your 20 year old boyfriend, who has a prison record and whom he hates."

"Oh come on," Ryker leaned back in the booth "Your dad loves me." "Yeah, loves the idea of shooting you," I narrowed my eyes. Ryker rolled his eyes again and sent me a look "Well I don't really care about being worthy enough for an abusive Bastard."

"He hasn't laid a hand on me in months, he's trying Ryk," I admitted "He really is." "Good because he lays one goddamn finger on you, and I swear to God Rain-I'll shoot him," Ryker warned.

"Speaking of shooting people.." I trailed off "Faith has a date with this guy and I bought her this dress..now it's not exactly something you'd approve up, but just let her live a little."

"Rain-" Ryker started, but was quickly cut off when the door bursted open and a man yelled "Everybody get down!" With a gun pointed out in his hands, and a mask over his face but he had the body structure of maybe 40's or 50's.

My eyes snapped over to Ryker and he quickly pushed me down to the ground and under the booth as he got down and so did everyone else. He quickly took out a glock he had on his side and my eyes widened as he slapped a mag into the gun, as a bullet loaded into the chamber.

"Ha, you really got something coming if you think you're getting up right now," I commented as I sent him a look. "Rain," He warned "I can handle myself."

"He has a gun!" I exclaimed in a whisper. "And so do I," Ryker retorted and the guy walked up to the man that was staring at me from earlier. Ryker went to get up, but I grabbed his hand.

"Ryk Please," I whispered with my grip tightening on his hand in fear my boyfriend could be killed at this very moment. He sighed and pressed his lips to mine, cupping my cheek with his free hand.

"I love you," He whispered and my forehead rested his forehead against mine. "Everyone stay down!" The man yelled again, and he pointed the gun out at a little crying girl. "Stand up," He ordered her and I saw the little girl with long blond hair and hazel eyes stand up.

My eyes went wide, and I froze "Phoenix." My head snapped back to Ryker "That's Jame's daughter; Phoenix. Ryker we have to get her."

"Where's your parents?" The man asked her as he knelt down to her height. "I-I don't know," She whispered with tears in her eyes. The man's lips tugged up into smirk as he raised the gun from his side and pointed it at Phoenix.

I grabbed a sharp kitchen knife from the top of the table and quickly got out from underneath the table. "Back away from kid!" I yelled, make all attention go towards me.

The man slowly stood up, before walking up to me. "I don't know who you think you are sweetheart," He said, and quickly pushed me back up against a wall and turned the knife around on my neck "But you better learn your place."

The knife dug into my skin, and the man raised the gun to the side of my head "Looks like you're going to be the first to go." I kept his glare, when Ryker quickly pulled him off me and slammed him into the counter before throwing a punch into his jaw, and pushing him so far he went over the counter and knocked down a bunch of glasses.

I quickly ran over to Phoenix where she was crying in between a group of strangers sobbing her eyes out. I knelt down to her and said to the lady that was comforting Phoenix. "Phoenix," I spoke and she looked up at me with tears streaming down her face "Come with me, will find your daddy."

Phoenix started to get up when the lady stopped her "We can't just let her go to you. You're a stranger." "I'm a friend of her dad, I'm not a stranger and I can't keep her with you either because that's exactly what you are."

"Sweetie, do you know her?" The lady asked Phoenix and I heard a gunshot go off. I turned around to see and the man pulled the trigger as everyone started to scream and run in panic. I grabbed Phoenix and picked her up as Ryker aimed the gun at the guy as the gun stood up from the ground.

Ryker pulled the trigger once and it hit the man in the chest. He clutched his chest before he fell back against the counter and I quickly ran out of the restaurant with Phoenix in my arms. Ryker came running behind me as we all evacuated the area.

I came running down an alleyway where I stopped when I saw a gang coming towards and recognized it was a gang that was allies of Rhett's gang. "Shit," Ryker muttered under his breath as people scattered the streets in panic while screaming.

"Ryk, we have to go now," I blurted and Ryker turned to me "Take Phoenix to the truck, I'll meet up with you." Ryker shoved the truck keys into my hands and I shook my head "Ryker no, you're not just going to take them on by yourself."

A gunshot went off and Ryker quickly pushed me off to the side and shielded me and Phoenix. "Rain, I'll be fine. Take Phoenix," He ordered and another gun shot went off as Phoenix held onto me tightly "NOW RAIN!"

I took the keys and quickly ran down the sidewalk with Phoenix clinging onto me for dear life. I took a turn down an alley and ran out into the middle of the street, making cars slam on their breaks.

I ran down the streets and came to Ryker's truck. I quickly opened the driver's seat and placed Phoenix in the passenger side. Placing the keys in, I tried to turn on the engine but it wouldn't start.

I continued to try and I sighed "You've got to be kidding me." "Where's my daddy?" Phoenix cried, and I looked at her "Phoe, we're going to find him. I promise." Hearing a gunshot go off, I quickly grabbed a gun that Ryker had in the glove department. Before taking Phoenix to get out of the truck and walked over to a motorcycle that was parked on the side of a street.

I placed Phoenix on the ground and got down under the motorcycle to mess with the wires only to hot wire it. My grandfather had taught me a thing or two about hot wiring when I went to visit him in Maine during the summer.

Red wire..blue wire..green wire...

After a few minutes I got it to work, not really being able to remember or explain what I exactly did. I lifted Phoenix onto the motorcycle, and placed her on my lap. "Phoenix, you need to hold on tight, okay?" I demanded and she nodded shyly before placing her hands on the handles.

I hit the gas and quickly caught the balance before I pulled out and swerving in and out of cars. Cars and taxi's were coming to a stop at a red lights, but I took a deep breath before pushing on the clutch and speeding up to run a red light.

I went down an alleyway and saw Ryker beating up some guy in a fight and the guy slammed Ryker up against a wall and put a gun up to his head. I got off the motorcycle quickly and raised the gun before I pressed the trigger down.

The bullet hit the guy and he stumbled back against the brick wall of a building. Ryker came up to me and pecked my lips "Thanks, babe." "Always saving you from being shot, I see," I chuckled and walked back to the motorcycle.

Phoenix came running up to me and hugged my legs tightly. "It's alright, sweetie," I reassured her as Ryker came up "Tell me you hot wired the motorcycle."

"Well..the truck was dead.." I trailed off, biting my lip nervously. "God, you're hot," He whispered into my ear before taking the keys and getting on the motorcycle. I placed Phoenix on my lap and I wrapped my arms around her and Ryker's torso, so she couldn't fall off.

"Hold on," Ryker said, before pulling out onto the street. He swerved in and out of people as he landed to certain sides to keep the balance even. Phoenix buried her face into Ryker's back out of fear and I pressed her back up against me so she would be more secure.

We pulled onto the bridge and Ryker went close to the edge to avoid traffic, making Phoenix clutch her grip on Ryker tighter. "Hold on Phoenix," Ryker reassured as he sped up.

My phone then started to ring and I pulled it out of my back pocket quickly before seeing Craig's number flash on my screen. I swiped to answer the call before placing it up to my ear "Uh hey Craig..."

"Where the hell are you?!" Craig yelled through the phone "Gang rivals are showing up everywhere!" "Yeah, I know. We were at a pizza restaurant and there was a bunch of gangs coming."

"Where are you now?" He asked. "About to get off the bridge," I answered, tightening my grip on Phoenix. "Don't go to the warehouse. We all had to evacuate because Rhett's gang was sending us threats," Craig stated.

"Alright. How about we all meet at my house?" I questioned. "Ok, will see you there Thompson," Craig approved before hanging up. I wrapped my arms around Ryker's torso again "Go to my house, whole gang is meeting there."

Ryker got off the bridge and took a turn to start heading towards my house.

* * * * * *

Running inside my house, Ryker carried Phoenix behind me and I opened the door only to walk in to see the whole gang along with my brothers.

"Rain Eliza!" Jax shouted as he approached me "What the hell is going on?!" "Jax, please," I dropped my keys on the side table "Just keep calm. I'll explain later."

I pointed at Reece before throwing him my phone "Call Shae and tell her to come to my house with Blake." "Blake?!" Peter exclaimed "You mean the one that tried to kill Ryker and get in your pants all year?!"

"Yeah, Rain-" Ryker started, but I stopped him "Blake's not like that. Plus he saved me at Prom from Hudson, I promise he'll help." "Uh..Rain..who's the kid?" Will trailed off, pointing back at Ryker with Phoenix.

"Guys! We told you to use protection!" Aaron accused, earning a smack upside the head from Andre and Valentino. "This is Phoenix..Jame's daughter.." I introduced and Phoenix buried her head into the crook of Ryker's next because she was obviously shy.

"Aww," Liz, Celeste, Ally, Juliet, and Leah all said in harmony "She's so cute." I ran a hand through my hair, sighing "Alright, you guys figure everything out. I'm going to call James and let him know I have Phoenix."

Ryker placed Phoenix down and she came running up to me. I took her hand, leading her up the grand staircase and to my room. I pushed the doors to my room open and Phoenix's jaw dropped "You're room is so pretty. Like a princess's."

"Thanks," I chuckled "You can go play with what you want. I'm gonna call your daddy." Phoenix nodded before she ran over to my bed and jumped up and started out of my window wall.

I scrolled through my contacts before landing on James's contact. I tapped the call button before placing it up to my ear and it rang a few times before he answered.

"Hey Porter-..James," I corrected myself "Sorry, force of habit." "It's fine," James sighed and I could hear the worry in his voice "Rain I can't talk right now-"

"James, I have Phoenix," I stopped him. "Wait, what?!" His voice perked up, and didn't sound as drained. "I was at a restaurant with Ryker, a guy from some gang came in with a gun and pointed it at Phoenix. She just seemed to be there by herself, so I grabbed her and I have her at my house. She's perfectly fine," I explained.

"Oh my God," Relief filled his tone "I was so worried, I had a police search sent out. I thought I lost her." "Well you can come get her if you want," I bit my lip, looking over to see Phoenix stare out the window.

"I'll be right over," He breathed before hanging up. Placing my phone down on my desk, I walked over to my closet and grabbed my clothes to change out of my uniform. "Phoe, I'm going to change really quickly, I'll be right back."

Phoenix's eyes snapped over to mine and she nodded innocently in agreement "Okay." I walked into my bathroom and my feet touched the cold marble floor, as I shut the door behind me.

Untying my Convereses, I slipped them off my feet before pulling of my ugly ass knee high uniform socks. There was a knock at the door followed by Ryker's voice.

He opened the door and I pushed my uniform kilt/skirt off. "Ryk, you're all beaten up. Why don't we to to the hospital?" I offered, feeling bad because he was beaten up with cuts all over him.

"I'm fine. Rain," He rolled his eyes at me. I grabbed the end of my shirt before pulling it over my head "God, I really wish you weren't so stubborn."

Ryker grabbed me by the waist before picking me up and setting me on the bathroom counter "Says you, Miss I'm not going to do that because I don't want to." "I don't say that," I scoffed, smacking his arm.

He laced his fingers with mine and played with them "You know I love you no matter what, right?" "Yeah.." I trailed off, looking up at him "Is there something wrong?"

"No, everything's fine. I just wanted you to know," He said, letting go of my hand "You should get changed, Craig wants everyone downstairs soon." Watching him in confusion, he walked out and shut my bathroom door behind him.

~ ~ ~ ~

"Rain!" Celeste yelled from the bottom of the steps "Someone's at the door!" Pulling on my leather jacket, I walked downstairs and to the front doors before opening one side.

"Hey James," I gave him a slight smile and he immediately pulled me into a hug. I was taken back for a minute and stayed frozen before returning the hug back.

"Oh my God, thank you so much for taking her," James breathed, hugging me tightly. "No problem," I said and glanced over to see Ryker walk in and his jaw clenched. I pulled back from James and tucked a piece of hair behind my ear.

"Her mom took her from her daycare and they somehow didn't realize she just stole Phoenix. She must of taken her to a restaurant and left when she didn't want to handle her anymore," James sighed. "Are you doing something to the daycare?" I asked, raising an eyebrow at him.

"I was talking to my sister and she said to sue them, but I don't have that money for a lawyer," James shrugged. "Well you don't need a lawyer," I shoved my hands in my pockets "I mean, my dad use to be the best of the best lawyers before he became sheriff. I'm sure he'd be glad to give you a few tips, he loves arguing over anything."

James chuckled with a small smile tugging at his lips "I'll think about it." Liz then came downstairs with Phoenix at her side. "Daddy!" Phoenix's eyes lit up as she ran up to him and James picked her up and grinned "Hey Phoe."

I smiled gently and Phoenix looked back at me "Thanks for watching me Rain." "No problem, sweetheart," I bounced on the heels of my feet. "Give Rain a kiss," James said to Phoenix as she put her down on the ground as she walked up to me.

I knelt down to her height and she wrapped her arms around me while I was in a squatting position, and she pecked pecked my lips. "Aww," Celeste grinned "She's so adorable. I want one."

Dawson looked over at Celeste "No, we already have a pregnant women. We don't need two at once." Phoenix went back over to James and he took her hand as he looked back at me "Thanks again Rain," then nodding at Ryker "You too Anderson."

Ryker nodded slightly as he leaned up against the wall. James walked out with Phoenix, shutting the door behind him. "Well isn't she the cutest thing," Juliet awed, and I turned around to see Joel come running upstairs from the 5th floor.

"You gotta see this," Joel said in shock before going into the living room and turning on the TV and going to tell news. I crossed my arms and leaned up against the wall.

Everyone was silent, as it opened to a news reported standing on the streets of New York in front of the pizza shop. "Today, gangs are taking over New York City, with evidence reporting to be after the known local gang 'Crusades'."

I looked over at the Liz and Ally, and we exchanged worried looks. I turned my attention back to the TV, as the reporter continued "Gangs originated from all over are coming, and we have uncertain reasons as to why. Today in the local pizza shop off 23rd street, people reported seeing Rain Eliza Thompson; 18 year old teenage model and Ryker Xavier Anderson; 20 year old Crusades gang member in the restaurant, and when a man who hasn't been identified came in Anderson was reported to hold the man at gunpoint to shoot him while Thompson took a child."

My eyes went wide, and I looked back at Ryker. The front doors bursted open, and my dad came storming in, with anger filling his expression as he came into the living room. "What the fuck is wrong with you?!" My dad shouted at me as he came in.

"Dad, I swear-" I started, but he cut me off "Do You understand how much fucking trouble you're in?! This is going to ruin everything, you could get fucking jail time, Rain!"

"Dad that wasn't just some kid!" I exclaimed, and my dad chucked his keys into the wall out of anger and it knocked down a painting that was hanging "Oh really Rain?! Then who's is it?!"

"Porter's!" I exclaimed, and my dad became still "What?" "Well..James. Remember Porter from when I was 13, we were best friends..Well when I was kidnapped he was part of that gang, his real name is James Porter Landlock; that was his daughter...I guess his daughter's mom doesn't have custody rights so she kidnapped Phoenix and dumped her at the restaurant..so I grabbed her before she got hurt," I explained.

My dad rubbed his face in his hands and sighed "Alright, I'll talk to the police and get everything cleared up. But you're grounded."

"Fine," I put my hands up in surrender and my dad shoved some envelops into my hands "Maybe you should start thinking about colleges away from New York, because Stanford accepted you."

I looked up from the envelopes in shock as I blinked slowly "But-," I couldn't finish when my dad cut me off "You'd be by your mom too."

My dad headed out and my eyes snapped up to Ryker's. He shook his head in disgrace as he mutter "Unbelievable," and grabbed his keys before walking out.

I dropped the envelopes and ran out after him, "Ryker!" I yelled, and he stopped before throwing his head back. "Ryk Please..you can't just walk out like this," I pleaded.

He turned around to face me "No Rain, you can't keep doing this to me. You keep hiding all these things behind my back, and have me thinking that you're just going to get up one day; pack yourself, get on a plane, and that'll be the end of us."

"Don't ever say that," I shook my head while walking up to him "You know I love, I wouldn't ever just walk out you." "Then why did you apply for Stanford?"

"I applied before we were even together..I never thought I would want to actually stay here, there was nothing in New York for me until I met you and the gang," I explained.

Clutching his shirt in my hands, I sighed "Ryk, what's been going On? You've been so off Especially earlier, in the bathroom."

"It's nothing Rain," He took my hands in his as he stared down at them "I've just been thinking about us a lot lately.." My lips pursed "Good things, I hope?"

"Why don't you wear rings?" He asked out of the blue, while staring at my fingers then looking up at me. Taken back by his question, I blinked slowly "Guess I just never had rings..never really thought about it. Why?"

"No reason," He shrugged, letting go of my hands "Just curious." "You sure you're okay?" I questioned, cocking an eyebrow at him.

"Everything's fine," He rolled his eyes at me. "You know, I've heard 'Fine' probably over 57 times today," I pointed out and he kissed more forehead.

# Chapter 27

"He asked you why you didn't wear rings?" Liz questioned, and I nodded slightly as I took a sip of my coffee. "Oh my God!" Juliet and Celeste exclaimed, with overjoy.

"Do you know what this means?!" Ally stood up from her seat. I shook my head, furrowing my eyebrows in confusion. "Rain.." Leah narrowed her eyes at me as she fixed a sleeping Melanie in her lap "Don't be so oblivious."

"I'm not!" I defended "I just figured he was being his usual Ryker self." "Rain," Ally scoffed before grinning "He's going to propose!" I choked and spit my coffee back into the mug before breaking out into a coughing fit.

"Ryker is not going to propose," I shook my head as I stood up from my seat and walked into the kitchen of the warehouse to put my mug away. "Oh come on, you two fight like a married couple anyways," Celeste rolled her eyes.

"Look, I know Ryker. And he's not the type of guy to propose..like ever," I defended. "Well I know my brother," Leah spoke up "And I know how much he loves you."

"We are not getting engaged, alright?!" I exclaimed before they all started bickering over this with me. "So if he did, you wouldn't say yes?" Juliet cocked an eyebrow at me.

"Well I don't know, because it's not going to happen," I defended. "But Hypothetically speaking, what would say?" I then heard the doors of the main room in the warehouse open. "We do not talk about this at all in front of the guys, understood?" I gritted, pointing a finger at all of them.

They all went silent and moments later all guys came into the kitchen. "Where's lunch?" Luca and Will asked, and Celeste flicked Luca in the head "Waiting for you to make it."

Ryker came up to me and pecked my lips. "Hey, how was work?" I asked and Ryker rolled his eyes "Guy came in and demanded for a lower price on his engine because I fixed it a month ago but he fucked it up again."

"Well did you lower the price?" I asked and he scoffed a laugh while grabbing a water bottle from the fridge "Hell No. I told him to pay or find a new mechanic."

The guys were all dealing with a bunch of stuff on the gangs and coming up with plans for if anything happened, while some of them went to work.

"Shit," Ryker muttered under his breath before he reached up to the cabinet and searched for a medication bottle. He sighed, and I grabbed my backpack and reached into the front pocket before handing them to him.

"Thank you, I promise I'll pay them next month," He sighed and I rolled my eyes at him "Ryk, I told you I'd pay for them." "But you shouldn't have too-" He started when I put my index finger up to his lips; making him shut up.

"Hush. We're not having this argument again," I stated. He rolled his bright blue eyes at me, before changing the subject "How was school?" I threw my head back and groaned at the thought "Horrible, we had a three hour graduation practice."

It was the last week of graduation and I was still in a reality shock from it, because I was officially going to out in the 'real world.' The thought made me horrified, and I could just imagine all the student loans and taxes building up.

"Liz! Liz! Liz!" A voice yelled and Alessandra came running into the kitchen again with a laptop in her hand. "Ally! Ally! Ally!" Liz mimicked her, with a chuckle as she put a bunch of dishes away.

"I found this apartment for $3500 a month, it's right by time-square and has a two bedrooms, a kitchen, living room, and bathroom," Ally informed, and Liz took the laptop from her.

"Not bad," Liz examined the laptop screen. "Plus it's right by the park, so hot shirtless guys probably run by there," Juliet popped a cut up piece of cucumber in her mouth.

"Well let's go check it out tomorrow, and we might have just found out apartment," Liz grinned at Alessandra while handing her the laptop back. "You guys find anything, yet?" Will nodded towards Ryker and I.

"Nope," I shook my head as I was filling out a bunch of paperwork for modeling. "Still on the fence about this," Leah narrowed her eyes at us "You guys seem to be moving fast again."

"Let them be," Luca rolled his eyes at Leah "At least they're not sleeping around with strangers." "Do you know how many bedrooms you want?" Celeste asked curiously, while cocking an eyebrow.

"3," I stated while not looking up from the papers I was filling out. "Rain apparently wants to live in a penthouse," Ryker's voice filled with sarcasm, making my eyes snap up to meet him.

"3 bedrooms is not a lot," I narrowed my eyes at him "Plus if we have-..Melanie and Faith certain nights then they can each have their own rooms." "You better not have been about to say kids," Leah looked at me knowingly, and my eyes went wide.

"Leah," Ryker warned "I don't really think you have territory to speak about the subject of having kids." I heard a car door slam shut loudly outside, and the doors to the warehouse busted open.

Hearing voices, I saw the rest of the gang come into the main room and Craig came into the kitchen. He looked at Ryker and nodded his head towards the living room "I need to talk to you."

Will and Luca hurriedly left the kitchen and Ryker followed Craig out. I looked at the girls worriedly "Whats going on?" "No idea.." Liz trailed off, as she dropped the dishes she was doing and walked into the living room.

My phone then started to to off, and I looked to see Joel's contact flash on my screen. "Hello?" I answered.

"Stay safe, I registered money into your account if you need it," Joel informed. Furrowing my eyebrows together, "What Joel? You're making no sense-"

The doors to the kitchen opened and Ryker came in and grabbed his keys "Rain, you're coming with me." "Joel, I'll call you back," I said before hanging up the phone.

"What's going on?" I asked with worry starting to take over me. "Grab your stuff, I'll explain on the way," Ryker stated and I quickly flung my backpack over my shoulder before following him out of the warehouse.

Getting into the passenger seat of his truck, Ryker got in the driver's side and started the truck before backing out of the parking space and down the road that led you away from the warehouse.

"Get change, I think there's some of your clothes in the back," Ryker informed while stepping on the gas. Turning around, I leaned back and grabbed saw I left a bag in the back from the one day Ryker picked me up.

Pulling out a white t-shirt, jeans, and leather jacket; I turned back in my seat and undid my uniform skirt and got changed into the clothes. "Want to tell me whats going on? Or where the hell we're going?" I asked, sending him a look.

Ryker clenched his jaw, clutching the steering wheel "You can't get mad." "Oh my God.." I muttered "What the hell did you do!?"

"Look, when we first met I was dealing with a lot of shit at the time. And I was in between gangs, because Craig started to piss me off. I was selling this guy cocaine, and he ripped me off then framed me," Ryker explained before pausing for a moment and looking over at me "I killed half of his gang; 9 to be exact just so he wouldn't rip anyone off."

My eyes widened and I took in what he said. A feeling of unsecruity came over me, and I gulped in response. "You murdered nine people.." I whispered under my breath, but loud enough for him to hear.

"Rain," He grabbed my hand, making me flinch "I wouldn't ever do anything to hurt you." "Nine people are dead Ryker, nine people with family and friends!" I exclaimed as I tore my hand away from his.

"People die everyday," Ryker pointed out "They deserved it." "No one deserves to be killed!" My voice rose, and muscles became tense "And you can't kill people for someone else's actions!"

"Callum." Ryker said, and I looked at him in confusion "The guy was Callum." "Who's Callum?" I asked, furrowing my eyebrows together and looking over at him.

"My father," Ryker stated, pressing down all the way on the gas as he swerved in and out of cars. "I thought he was in jail," I blinked slowly and clutched my seat belt. "He was, he bailed with money that his gang robbed from a bank," Ryker took a sharp turn a down a road before glancing over at me "He wants you."

"W-what?" I stuttered, my eyes going so wide I thought they'd pop out of their sockets. "Zeke contacted him, he gave him all your personal information. He figured if he gets to you, he'll get to me. That's why all those gangs came yesterday, they're working for him."

"You've got to be kidding me," I slammed my head back against the seat "Why am I always wanted dead?" "Because you're dating me," Ryker rolled his eyes at me "But we're going to stop at your house and grab some stuff, because we're going to Pennsylvania for awhile."

When Ryker pulled up to my house I saw a familiar car in the driveway. Unbuckling my seatbelt, I quickly got out and ran into the house as Ryker followed behind me. Pushing the grand doors open to the house, silence filled the air.

"Rain," A voice breathed and I looked over to see him walk down the grand staircase. "Gramps!" I ran up and hugged him tightly, as he hugged me tightly back "Oh my gosh, you've grown up so much."

Travis Thompson; aka my grandfather who's my dad's father. My grandfather and I use to be extremely close, and I use to spend my summers with him when I was younger because he lived in Maine. I haven't seen him since sophomore year summer, because I had everything with Tyson going on.

Pulling back from him, "What are you doing here?" A voice cleared and I looked over to see my dad walk out from the living room. My grandfather sighed before looking at me "I came when I saw what happened yesterday on the news."

"Oh," My mouth formed an 'o' shape "About that.." "Rain, you need to get going," My dad said as he dropped a key on a decorative table "You'll hit traffic."

Looking back at Ryker, he sent me a look which was saying my dad is right. Ryker obviously told my brothers or dad about What's going on, and that must be why Joel said all that when he called. "Right..." I trailed off, then going up the steps and to my room.

I walked into my closet, searching for a backpack and stuffing necessities as I ran around my room. Walking up to my desk, I quickly searched for a magazine of bullets when I knocked over something and the glass shattered.

"Shit," I muttered under my breath, bending down to the ground to pick up the broke picture frame with a picture of my mom and I when I was 13. My heart fell, and I traced the broke frame with my thumb while staring at the picture.

"I miss her," I said to Ryker as I felt his presence behind me. "I'm sure she misses you too," He said, while walking up behind me. "Then Why hasn't she called lately?" I questioned, looking up at him.

Ryker's phone then started to go off and he pulled it out before his face was taken over with annoyance "Rain, we have to go. Craig is already calling me." Nodding slightly, Ryker pulled me up off the ground and we headed out of my room.

"Stay safe," My dad hugged me quickly and looked at Ryker with a stern look "Take care of her." My grandfather then pulled me into a hug, "Please be careful and give me a call."

"Will do." I nodded, pulling back from him "Love you gramps." "I love you to Rain," He tucked a piece of my hair behind my ear before I gave a small smile and turned around to Ryker.

He took my hand, intertwining his fingers with mine and leading me out of the house. The door shut behind us, and I looked back before taking a deep breath in realization of everything that's going to happen.

* * * * *

Scrolling through my phone on random social media sites, I came across a random message in my inbox from the username: Natalie_Knox and clicked on her profile to figure out who she was.

I don't ever recall meeting her, but she had chocolate brown eyes, long brown thin straight hair, and was stick thin. "Do you know Natalie Knox?" I asked Ryker, while looking up from my phone.

His eyes snapped over to mine before he looked back at the road "You remember Officer Knox? The one that Craig hired to help us find you, Natalie is his daughter. She was a bitch anyways."

I looked at the message that was about coming to Pennsylvania with an address attached to it, that I opened up in Google. It seemed to be an abandoned warehouse, that was isolated.

"She sent me an address to some warehouse," I informed Ryker. "Probably where we're suppose to go. Neil said he was going to forward me the address." Ryker pulled down a road that was completely empty and only lit by the street lights.

We were in Pennsylvania now, and it was about 9 o'clock and dark as well as raining. Ryker placed a hand on my thigh while keeping the other one on the steering wheel. "Ryk," I spoke up and turned my head to look at him "Why were you put in foster care?"

Ryker tensed up as he looked over at me for a moment "Why are you asking?" "Because you never tell me anything about your childhood," I frowned at him.

"That's because I didn't have a childhood, I had to grow up by the time I was 8," Ryker scoffed at the thought. "Can you give me a run-down on The-Ryker-Anderson-Non-Existent-Childhood, then?" I cocked an eyebrow at him.

"Fine," He rolled his eyes at me "My parents were married at 17 because my mom got pregnant at 14 and had Leah at 15, they met in the Crusades gang when my dad was a member and my mom got herself caught up with him."

"17.." I blinked in complete shock, and Ryker nodded "Engaged at 16, married at 17; Insane if you ask me. Anyways, then they had me, Reece, and a Faith. My dad was abusive as is, add alcoholic and drug abuser in there, plus a gang leader; you had the perfect combination for a father. He abused all of us, including my mom who was too scared to stand up to him."

Ryker took a turn down an empty road, and kept his eyes on the road "My mom lost her job which is the only thing we lived off as. She became a stripper, but that didn't pay the bills for a family of 6 at the time. I remember going to school and teachers always asking me what was wrong because I had obvious bruises and marks. Child services caught on, took us away and split all us up for foster care."

"Ryk..I'm so sorry," I whispered, feeling extremely guilty. Ryker shrugged lightly "I was in and out of foster cares with abusive parents, and it just became a pattern. When I was 13, I met Craig. He took me in, and I was trained before initiated into the gang. The day I turned 18, Leah and I pulled Reece, Faith, and Melanie out of foster care. Leah took custody of Faith and Melanie plus Reece until he turned 18. Then we dealt with the usual gang stuff, I was busy with selling and everything. I honestly thought I was going to die by the time I hit 20."

He looked over at me, a smirk tugging up at his lips "Then I met you." My lips broke out into a smile that I tried to hold back but failed miserably. "Someone remind me why I love you, because the first time I met you I wanted you dead instead," Ryker smirked.

I scoffed, smacking his arm "Oh please, you're lucky my irresponsible-ass forgot my books at school. You wouldn't even of made it to 20."

"What about you?" Ryker glanced over at me. "What do you mean 'What about me'?" I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion. "Well, I know your parents got divorced, mom moved to California, and your dad is an abusive fucker. But that's it."

My lips pressed in a thin line, I turned straight in my seat and stared ahead at the road. "When my mom was 18, she accidentally got pregnant with Jax because my dad roofied her at a party. My mom and dad were together, but my mom refused to sleep with him. Which my dad took into his own hands."

Taking a deep breath, I continued "They got married and had Jax, then Ryan, Joel, and eventually me. I was a mistake; my dad told me he didn't want anymore kids, especially when he found out I was a girl."

"Best goddamn mistake to ever happen," Ryker scoffed at the idea of my dad. "My dad threatened to kill my mom is she didn't get an abortion, and that's when all the abuse started..towards my mom at least. When I was born, everything was fine until my 8th birthday party."

Pausing for a moment, I recalled the party like it was yesterday. "It was a family and friend party, my dad had one-sixteen too many drinks. I was with my friends, he grabbed me by the hair and dragged me into the house. He took his belt off and whipped me with it, all because he didn't have a clear mind-state. That was the first night he laid a hand on

me, and my mom was going to take me and leave. The thing was, she was too scared to leave; my dad would've came after her, and it would've put her and me in jeopardy."

Ryker looked over at me with a sympathetic face. "I'd to to school with bruises all over my face and had to lie to my teachers about everything, and I dreaded going home every day. I remember one night sitting on the bathroom ground, crying my eyes out, and having some of my mom's prescription pills in my hand when I was only 13."

"Rain.." Ryker said in complete shock as he looked over at me, his face completely dumbstruck. "I was about to commit suicide, and let everything be over. Joel luckily broke the door down and stopped me before it was too late. My dad cheated on my mom, held her at gunpoint, and was drunk 95% of the time."

Fidgeting with the sleeves of my leather jacket, I kept my eyes narrowed down "He was an alcoholic who needed help, but wouldn't get it. Every Night was a fight, and every night my mom could have been killed. My dad abused her pass her breaking point. So one night everything happened..my mom was done. She packed up her stuff, and left."

"Babe..I had no idea-" Ryker started but my phone buzzed, to see that Vince texted me and I took this as the chance to change the subject.

Vince Baker: We're all stopping at the Walmart on 25th street to grab a few things

"Find 25th street, everyone is stopping at Walmart I guess." I explained to Ryker and he nodded before turning into the shopping center that was packed with people.

Once we found Walmart and parked the truck before getting out. I came around to the other side of the truck, and grinned at Ryker before pressing my lips into his. I took his hands and placed them right above my butt and Ryker pulled away "Alright, what do you want?"

"How'd you know I wanted something?" I asked shocked, that he knew. He narrowed his eyes at me "Because I know you." "Food, I'm starving." I stated as we headed into Walmart.

We walked through the doors of the store to see a bunch of people dressed in black and had mask covering their face as they turned towards us and a guy pulled out a gun, aiming it in our direction.

"Oh God.." I gulped nervously, turning to look at Ryker "Why does this always happen?"

# Chapter 28

"How'd you know I wanted something?" I asked shocked, that he knew. He narrowed his eyes at me "Because I know you." "Food, I'm starving." I stated as we headed into Walmart.

We walked through the doors of the store to see a bunch of people dressed in black and had mask covering their face as they turned towards us and a guy pulled out a gun, aiming it in our direction.

"Oh God.." I gulped nervously, turning to look at Ryker "Why does this always happen?"

"Rain Eliza Thompson." A guy pulled down his mask and revealed his jet black hair with dark brown eyes "You're coming with us."

Ryker clenched his jaw, tensing up, and pushed me behind him prospectively. "Ryk," I whispered and he grabbed hold of my hand while holding a glare to the guy.

The whole store was filled with people down on their hands and knees in complete horror. I looked over to see the gang all held captive in numerous guy's arms.

"She's not going anywhere." Ryker gritted with a glare in his eyes. The guy started approach towards us and Ryker quickly pulled a gun out, before holding it up to his throat.

"I said she's not going anywhere." Ryker demanded, keeping me behind him by his side. "Mr. Anderson, I suggest you give up the girl before Callum is called."

Callum is Ryker's biological father..

Ryker wrapped his finger around the trigger and I heard the sobs of regular people that were down on the ground, huddled together in fear. A girl then screamed at the top of her lungs as she rocked herself back and fourth while covering her ears.

The guy took this as a chance to try and grab me, but Ryker quickly pulled the trigger and a loud gunshot went off, making me jump and everyone began screaming.

The guy clutched his throat before immediately falling to the ground. The rest of the men let go of the gang and went up to man that was shot in panic. "Boss! Boss!" They yelled, tapping his shoulders and shaking his body but there was no response.

Slowly raising my hand to cover my mouth that was jaw dropped, as I stared down at the guy my boyfriend had just shot and killed.

Yes, I've seen Ryker shoot people before but never so up close and never the way to cause death. Craig ordered everyone out, but I stood frozen in shock as to what had just happened.

Ryker yelled my name repeatedly but I didn't answer since my eyes were stuck on the shot dead man laying on the ground in front of me.

I heard Ryker groan before he picked me up and gunshots started to be fired everywhere.

We eventually reached the truck in the parking lot and Ryker lifted me up into the passenger seat before buckling me in and slamming the door shut. He ran around to the drivers side and got in before slamming his foot down on the ground and speeding away.

He pulled down a dark empty street with trees surrounding it on both sides and it had no street light. "Ryker, take me home." I slowly looked over at him.

"I'm not doing that Rain." He flicked his high-beams on. "Ryker, take me home now." I ordered sternly, as the panic kept eating at me slowly "I want to go home."

"Babe, you know your house isn't safe. That's the first place Callum will look if he hears you're back in town." Ryker stated, and I immediately snapped "I wanna go Home!"

"Rain, I'm sorry but I'm not taking you home." He clenched his jaw, keeping his eyes on the road and pressing down on the gas and I saw everyone's cars approach once we merged into lanes on the road.

"Ryker!" I yelled, my voice raising in annoyance and anger "I'm gonna fucking get kidnapped again!" "I'm not letting anyone lay a hand on you," His hands clutched the steering wheel and his knuckles began to turn white.

Grabbing my phone out of my pocket, the screen was bright on my eyes and I scrolled through my contacts before landing on James Landlock.

Biting my lip, I clicked on his contact and glanced out of the corner of my eye to see Ryker who was looking ahead at the road. Taking a deep breath, I hit the text icon and began typing.

* * * * *

Ryker pulled down a road and it led to the middle of nowhere. "Where the hell are we?" I asked, unbuckling my seat belt as I stared at the abandoned warehouse in front of us.

"We just need to sleep here for tonight and then will head back to New York tomorrow, we convinced Callum to follow us to New Jersey and he's only going to keep going south." Ryker opened the driver door and got out.

My phone buzzed in my pocket and I looked down to see a text from James. I looked out the window to see all of the gang get out of there cars.

James Landlock: Here

Quickly pushing the door open, to the truck I saw a car pull up and James get out. I ran up to him and he pulled me into a tight hug "Oh thank God you're alright."

I heard a car door slam and I pulled back and turned around to see a very pissed off Ryker. "What the fuck do you think you're doing?!" Ryker yelled, anger rising in his voice and his fist clutching at his side.

"I invited him, so he could help." I stated stern and all the gang watched uneasily. Ryker's eyes were a black color and you couldn't see the difference from his pupil and iris.

"Get the fuck out of here." Ryker gritted towards James, and James stood up straight "I don't take orders from you Anderson." Ryker's fist clutched harder and he rose his fist to send a punch to James.

When his fist was suppose to make contact with James, I quickly stopped it with my hand and wrapped my fingers around his knuckles.

Ryker's dark eyes that held nothing but a glare of hatred moved to my eyes. He didn't say anything, and everyone stayed silent; not daring to make a noise.

Ryker dropped his fist, and tore his eyes away from me before turning around and walking away. I didn't call his name, I didn't run after him, I just stood there and hope that this would solve itself.

"Rain-" Ally spoke up, coming up to me and hugging me tightly "He'll calm down, it'll be okay. Just let him get some space to think for a bit."

"God I'm such a horrible girlfriend." I ran a hand through my hair once I pulled back from Ally. "No, no. He's just has a lot going on right now, tomorrow you guys will be perfectly fine."

James came up to me and sighed "Look Rain, I can leave if you want. I completely get it, if you were my girlfriend I'd act the exact same way. Plus I left Phoenix with my sister, and the house might burn down if I don't."

"I just feel bad, you came all the way out here-" I started, but James shook his head and his lips tugged up to a small smile "Think about yourself for once, it's okay to be selfish sometimes. See you Rain."

He kissed my forehead before turning around and walking away to his car before backing away and speeding down a road.

"Rain." Craig spoke up and I looked over at him "Go find him, I'm sure he wants to see you." Vince gave me a nod to the side "He went that way, here's a flashlight."

Vince tossed me a flashlight and I nodded slightly before biting my lip and I pulled out my phone as I started to walk and went to the find my phone app because Ryker's was programmed into it and I got directions to where he is.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

After walking for a half hour in the freezing cold woods, stepping over wet sticks and logs, and trying to avoid mud as much as I could to keep my converses from becoming a disastrous decision.

I came to a Lake which is where the phone was located, and it was correct when I saw Ryker sitting on the small slope of grass that led down to the lake and he skipped rocks into the lake, and I watched as it skipped 3 times.

Turning off my flashlight, and putting my phone away, I grabbed a flat thin rock and walked up behind him as silently as possible and turned my wrist in, before flinging it out and it skipped across the water 5 times.

Ryker turned his back to look at me, and I gave a small smile "I use to call myself a professional rock skipper when I was 9." When I didn't even get a chuckle, I sighed and sat down next to him.

I looked out to the lake and on the other side was trees upon trees, and the dark night sky was full of bright white stars that glistened down onto the water of the lake that was almost completely still, with a few ripples here and there.

"Pretty Lake, I would kill to live somewhere like here." I commented, and looked over to the side to just see him staring out straight without a movement. He was mad, and the guilt was eating away at me.

"Ryk, look." I sighed after a few moments of silence "James left, he went home. I'm sorry, I shouldn't of told him to come. It was wrong of me."

"Damn right it was." He kept staring at the lake and skipped a rock as hard as possible and it skipped across 6 times. "Is this how we're going to be?" I asked, my heart sinking "Fighting constantly?"

He looked over at me and his eyes went directly to mine "I don't know, that depends. Where do you see us in a few years Rain?"

I was taken back by his question, and blinked slowly "Is this what you're so hung up about? The future?" "That doesn't answer the question." He clenched his jaw as he turned his attention back towards the lake.

"I don't know. I'll be in college, will both be in the gang, and moved into an apartment that we both have been talking about." I shrugged, unsure of what the future holds. Of course I had my own thoughts and hopes, but I wasn't going to say them.

Ryker shook his head and scoffed a laugh. "What?" I asked confused as to why he still seemed annoyed. "That's what you want for the future?" He questioned, looking back at me "That's where you see us?"

"Well where do you see us Ryker?!" I asked, my voice rising a bit from how he was making mad from asking questions and liking the answers.

"If I asked you to marry me right now, would you say yes?!" Ryker yelled, his eyes boring into me.

My eyes went wide, and I was in complete shock and I couldn't speak. Ryker rolled his eyes "That's what I thought." "I'm 18, Ryk..marriage is a pretty big thing. I haven't even graduated High School yet." I managed, still in shock.

"Do you think will break up in the future?" Ryker asked, cleaning his jaw as he waited for answer. I pressed my lips in a thin line "No, I see us still together."

"Then why wait, Rain? If you think will always be together, why does it matter what age you are to get married?" Ryker snapped.

Rubbing my temples, I looked away for a second before looking back at him "I don't understand what you're getting at. You're not asking me to marry you, right?"

"No." He stared at the lake, skipping another rock "I'm not asking you to marry me Rain. I've just been thinking about us a lot lately."

"And what have you been thinking?" I asked nervously, swallowing a lump in my throat. He scoffed another laugh under his breath and looked down at the grass "You don't want to know."

I felt tears prick my eyes, my heart dropped, my palms became sweaty and I found it harder and harder to even manage to be able to talk because I felt tears start to well up.

"Yes I do."

I hoped I wouldn't regret those words, after he told me and I took a deep breath to steady my breathing. In the future of course I wanted us to be married, doesn't even have to be the future and sometime have kids; cause I was completely in love with Ryker Anderson.

He took a deep breath and looked at me, and the stars were are only light source. "You'll have to stick with me to find out." Ryker stood up from the grass, and headed back to the woods, leaving me by myself.

~ ~ ~ ~

Tapping my fingers on my stomach, as I laid down and stared at the ceiling the music from my headphone blasted into my ears.

Once I finally got back to the warehouse, it had already been past midnight and we apparently had to get up really early to get back to New York the next morning so Craig made everyone go to sleep, and we were all laying on blankets in the main room of warehouse.

Ryker and I haven't spoken a word to each other since the lake, and it was driving me insane from him not telling me what he was thinking about. I wanted us to be okay, and go back to how things were before the whole kidnapping thing went.

I felt a tap on my arm, and I flinched because I expected everybody to be asleep but I took out my headphones and Ally turned on her side to face me.

"Hey." She whispered "Can't sleep?" I shook my head and glanced over to where Ryker was asleep by the guys on the other side of the room. Ally must of known what I was looking at "Rain, it'll all be okay."

"How many times have I heard that before." I shifted so I was on my side and facing her. "You guys are just going through some rough times, you have before and that didn't stop you guys." She reassured.

Our voices were very hushed and quiet in whispers, trying not to wake anybody. "Yeah, but we've been arguing constantly and I just want it to stop."

"Well," She rested her head on her hand and so did I "Where do you actually see you guys in the future? And you can tell me, I won't tell him because I know what you told him was complete bullshit."

"Its embarrassing." I sighed, and she cocked an eyebrow at me "So having a future with your boyfriend is embarrassing?" "No, No." I shook my head "Its just- I don't know. It's embarrassing to say."

Ally glanced back at Ryker then looked back at me "Well what if I told you, that Ryker and I were talking one day and he told me where he wanted you guys in the future."

"Yeah, not together." I rolled my eyes, and she shook her head as a smile tugged at her lips "The complete opposite Rain." My eyes widened "What do you mean?"

"Not my place to tell you." She shrugged. "Ally-" I began, but she chuckled softly "You'll find out soon Rain, just be patient and you'll find out. Goodnight."

Before I could say anything, Ally turned her back towards me and tried to head back to sleep. Aggravation was the word that could most describe how I was feeling right now.

I laid back down on my back and stared up at the ceiling and put my headphones back in as I tried to get myself to sleep but it was no use.

This is going to be a long night..

* * * * *

"Rain, you're freezing." Vince came up to me and rubbed his hands up and down my arms that had been crossed over my chest. "I'm f-fine." My jaw chartered from how cold I am.

It was 5 a.m. and it was freezing out and my leather jacket wasn't doing much and we were all outside packing up to go back home to New York.

"I'm gonna go find you a blanket." Vince stated, and I nodded slowly before he walked away in search for a blanket. My phone started ring in my back pocket and I pulled it out, and saw Jax's number flashing on the screen.

"Hello?" I answered, after getting my frozen fingers to be able to answer to call button.

"Hey sis." Jax said in a tired voice "I was just calling to see if you're okay?" "Yeah," I lied "Fine, everything is just prefectly fine."

I heard Jax's name being yelled in the background and he must have been at work already. "Alright got to go, Love you sis."

"Love you, Bye." I hung up, and Ryker walked over to me as I was standing against the tailgate of the truck, and he grabbed something out of bag before I saw him take a couple of prescription pills, but I averted my eyes and rubbed my hands up and down my arms.

Ryker threw the bag back, not making eye contact with me; he took off his leather jacket and laid it over my shoulders so it hung. He didn't say anything, and he walked away towards where the rest of the gang was to finish packing up.

Vince came back with a blanket and handed it to me "You okay?" I nodded in response, and he wiped a year that had escape from my eye with his thumb "I don't think tears mean 'okay'."

"Just tired." I shrugged "Didn't get much sleep last night." "Yeah, neither did Ryker." He sighed "Was up all night."

"Wait, what-" I started but was cut off when Craig clapped his hands together "Lets head out!" Everyone started to walk off to the cars they were in on the way here and I sighed before heading over to Ryker's truck.

Getting into the passenger seat, and Ryker got into the driver's side he started the engine and backed out and headed down an empty road without a word being said.

My phone then started ringing again, and I looked down to see Joel calling me now. Sighing, I answered the call "Hey."

"Rain!" His voice was full of worry and weakness as if he was out of breath. "Joel." I sat up straight, becoming tense "Joel, What's wrong?"

"Dad's been shot."

# Chapter 29

Getting into the passenger seat, and Ryker got into the driver's side he started the engine and backed out and headed down an empty road without a word being said.

My phone then started ringing again, and I looked down to see Joel calling me now. Sighing, I answered the call "Hey."

"Rain!" His voice was full of worry and weakness as if he was out of breath. "Joel." I sat up straight, becoming tense "Joel, What's wrong?"

"Dad's been shot."

I froze, and my phone fell out of my hand as those words repeated in my head. My heart felt like it had stopped, and everything seemed like it had slowed down.

Words couldn't describe how I felt right now. Yes, he's abusive but he hasn't beem for months and he's been getting himself help just so he won't hurt me anymore. Plus he's my dad..

"My dad's been shot." I managed to get out in complete shock, and Ryker's eyes snapped over to mine. Ryker quickly grabbed my phone that fell onto the center consol and started to talk to Joel, as he kept one hand on the steering wheel.

Tears started to escape my eyes, and I clutched the necklace that was around my neck, and tried to not go into a panic attack. I didn't pay attention to what Ryker was saying, all I could focus on was those 3 words.

Dad's. Been. Shot.

When it kept repeating in my head, I officially lost it and broke into tears. I still had an hour and half ride back to New York city and I may never get to say goodbye to my dad again.

I covered my mouth with my hand, as a sob escaped my lips and I felt like my whole world had come crashing down on me. It felt like I had lost all control, and everything just was tumbling down and I was just watching waiting for it to hit me..and It did.

Ryker hung up the phone before he gripped the steering wheel with both hands, and slammed his foot down on the gas; going as fast as possible on the windy roads. He kept his eyes focused on the road, not daring to look away or we could crash in a second.

The tires streaked against the road, and we flew past trees and signs, on the empty back road and I closed my eyes shut tightly and held back sobs.

* * * * *

When Ryker pulled up to my house, I quickly unbuckled my seatbelt and opened the door before running up the driveway and ran up to the house because I guess Joel had to call the paramedics to the house because they wouldn't have had time to get him back to the hospital.

Ryker parked, and I ran into the house after forcing the door open because it had been jammed or blocked. Ryker came running up behind me and I ran into the living room and yelled at the top of my lungs "Dad!"

Then I froze when I walked into the entry of the living room. "Now, now Rain. Didn't anyone ever tell you not to yell in the house?"

Ryker came behind me, and my eyes were wide and at the point I almost fainted when Ryker grabbed me quickly so that I wouldn't move.

There was a man the same height as Ryker, with brown hair that was done up with a small amount of gel, his jaw was sharp, he was built, and had the exact same bright blue eyes as Ryker. He had a stuble beard growing, and he had two sleeves at tattoos on his arms that connected towards his chest.

"Ryker." His lips tugged into a wide evil smirk as his eyes narrowed at him "It's nice to finally see you, son."

My eyes went wide and the shock hit me once again when I realized that it had been Callum; Ryker's father standing in front of us.

He had 6 other men, and they all held my brothers and dad with their hands behind their back and a hand over their mouths so they couldn't speak. My dad was standing completely still, with blood and bruises all over his face but he wasn't shot.

Callum forced Joel to call me and tell me dad was shot, so that I would rush home and fall right into his trap. And I fell right into it without a second thought.

"Callum." Ryker gritted through his teeth, as he let go of the grip he had on my forearm. Callum tsked, and tossed something in his hands and I tried to focus my eyes onto the object.

I reached into my pocket which is wear I had a tactical knife, and I flicked it by a button, keeping it hidden by my side.

Callum walked slowly towards me and I gulped, swallowing a lump that had built up in my throat. He looked me up and down, and then reached his hand out to me, putting his fingers under my chin and making me look up to him.

"You must be the famous Rain Thompson, I've heard so much about." He said while he examined my face, keeping his fingers under my chin and his touch made me feel unease and sent chills up my spine.

"Pretty face, No wonder you're a model." His lips grew into an evil grin that screamed trouble "Wonder what you're like in bed."

Ryker immediately reacted after that comment, and shoved him off me "Don't fucking touch her, you fucking rapist." "Well if the condom fits, where it." Callum gave an annoyed shrug "Just like what I should've done with your mother so you wouldn't of been born."

My heart sunk for Ryker just to hear those words come from Callum's mouth, and I knew the exact feeling because my dad has done the same thing to me and it's one of the worse things in the world you could ever here.

Ryker and I still hadn't talked, and the tension between us was strong but the way he reacted picked my heart up because it gave me some hope that he still cares.

He stayed silent at Callum's comment, and the more I examined the two of them, the more they looked alike. Ryker really was Callum's son, they both carried themselves in the same way, had the same glare, same seductive smirk, and their personalities were obviously a lot alike.

I kept the knife hidden by my side, and when Callum started to turn around walk back over to my dad. I pulled the knife out, and went to go up behind him, but he quickly turned around and grabbed my wrist and pryed my fingers off the knife.

"I don't think you want to do that Rain. I mean, unless you want your sex tape released." He tested in a stern tone before the evil grin tugged at his lips again and my eyes widened.

"What?!" Ryker gritted, making me turn around to face him "Ryk-" I tried but, he refused to listen. Callum tossed the flash drive that was in his hands, to Ryker which he caught in his hands.

"There's your 16 year old girlfriend's sex tape." Callum stated "You should take a look, maybe Tyson can teach you a few things."

The sex tape..It was of Tyson and I, when he got me drunk and took advantage of me and recorded the whole thing. It's him raping me, on tape and I've done everything possible to keep Ryker from seeing it.

"What do you want?" Ryker snapped at Callum, I could tell he was angry and holding back from ripping his head off. Callum rubbed his jaw for a minute "Well revenge of course, But let's start with the girl."

He snapped his fingers and two guys came towards me, when Ryker quickly pushed me behind him. Ryker sent a punch to the guys jaw, and sending a kick into his stomach which sent him flying back into the glass table, that shattered from impact.

The next guy came up, sent Ryker a punch to the face and Ryker immediatly shook it off before clutching his fist and uppercuting him to the jaw, making the bones snap.

The guy groaned in pain, and Ryker kicked him into the lit fireplace. Callum gave a pissed off look "You shouldn't have done that."

Callum came towards Ryker, punching him from the side, so his fist slid across his face and Ryker's lip busted and nose started to bleed. Ryker quickly moved to grab something, and he took the glock that was in the holster of his jeans.

With a steady hand, he slapped a mag into it and raised it to Callum while wrapping his finger around the trigger. "You leave my girlfriend and her family alone, or you're leaving for fucking hell." Ryker's eyes were dark black, and I've never seen his face so stone cold.

I hid behind Ryker, as I clung to his shirt tightly, and kept my eyes on Callum who was staring at Ryker, waiting for him to pull the trigger. Ryker was about to pull the trigger, when everything seemed to go in slow motion and I saw Callum grab my dad and push him in front of him just as Ryker pulled the trigger.

My ears popped from the gun, and I screamed at the top of my lungs when my dad fell to the ground where shattered glass was everywhere, and his head was bleeding. The door busted open and I my head slowly turned to see our neighbors and the rest of the gang come in with police who must of been called already.

I fell to the ground on my knees as I broke into tears, and Rykers arms were still around me, keeping me from falling or anything as I looked at my dad who's eyes were shut and completely silent on the ground.

Cops rushed over to Callum and his goons in handcuffs, and put him into handcuffs since he had blood all over his hands and I watched paramedics run in and hurriedly out my dad on a gurney and rush out of the house.

I was completely broken inside, and sobbed my eyes out. Cops rushed over to me, and bombarded me with questions but I stayed on my knees, with Ryker's arm around me as he yelled at people to back up.

* * * * *

"Rain!" A voice called, and I looked over to see Ally run over and hug me tightly "I am so so sorry." It was currently 5 in the morning and I ended up sleeping in the hospital last night, which was not fun.

The doctors have told us nothing, except that he lost a lot of blood so they had to transfer a lot of blood and run some test to get a match. Apparently they had to remove a lot of glass, because it was all in his body from when he fell. Jax, Ryan, and Joel were questioned all last night by the cops and Ryker was then accused as the culprit but he said the shooting was for self defense. We still haven't talked much, only a few sentences here there.

Graduation is tomorrow, and I'm an absolute mess. I pulled back from Ally, wiped my year stained face and finished making my coffee, that I had sat down on the counter of the hospital cafeteria.

There was a tap on my shoulder, and I turned around and to see Blake and pulled me into a hug immediatly "I came as soon, as I heard. God Rain, I am so sorry; I can't even imagine."

It was the same words over and over again, and everyone gave me hugs after hugs but they didn't mean or feel like anything there was no comfort whatsoever. I just felt cold on the inside and like I was just a space.

"Things happen, I guess." I shrugged once I pulled away then turning towards Ally "Uh hey, I'm gonna take a walk with Blake for awhile. I'll see you later." She nodded slightly, giving me a concerned look before I gtabbed Blake's forearm and pulled him out of the cafeteria as we walked down the hallways of the hospital.

"How you holding up?" He asked, breaking the silence that was held. "I'm alive, aren't I?" I gave him a glance as I fidgetted with my coffee cup. I didn't like coffee, but I needed something at this point.

"Doesn't seem like it." He muttered under his breath, and I gave him a confused look while cocking an eyebrow at him as we continued to walk side by side.

"You don't stop living when your heart stops beating, you stop living when your heart beats stop having meaning."

"You've been on tumblr lately." I pursed my lips as I took a sip of my coffee and he rolled his eyes at me, and silence appareard again.

I kept wishing for silence, because it meant I wouldn't hear "Are you okay?" "I'm so sorry." "You must be so heartbroken." But when I finally got it, it made me feel tense and uncomfortable.

"Blake." I breathed, preparing myself to say what I was about to tell him because with Blake it was a hit or miss "I need to ask you something, and I have no idea what to do."

He looked over at me and just gave me a nod. "So Ryker and I are fighting, and he keeps pushing at the idea of marriage and the future but I have no idea what to do."

Blake's eyes went wide before he yelled "What?! MARRIAGE?!" "Shh!" I covered his mouth with my hand and looked around to see attention on us.

"Yes okay." I took my hand away, and we continued walking. "Rain you're 18!" He exclaimed in a whisper.

"Yeah I know, but Ryker keeps saying age shouldn't matter if you love someone. I just have no idea what to do, because we keep arguing and we're already moving in with each other..I love him to death, but I just think I'm so young." I explained.

"Well is he gonna propose?" Blake asked, and I bit my lip nervously before looking over at him.

~ ~ ~ ~

I stared at the altar and and the flowers, crosses, and candles that we're everywhere and I held back tears and took in a deep breath as I dropped my head and looked down at the ground.

I was currently in the chapel of the hospital, just thinking and praying that my dad was going to be alright The doors opened, but I didn't look back because I just suspected someone else came to pray for a loved one or something, but the pew creaked, when someone sat down next to me.

I lifted my head to see Ryker, and sighed in response. "Look, Rain, I'm sorry. I shouldn't have pushed the thought of marriage on you, its just that I saw you with James and I've already lost you and I don't want too again."

My eyes seemed attached to him from our shared gaze. "It's fine." I wiped a tear "It's just..My parents were my age when they got married, and well look how they are now."

"Is that what you're so afraid of? To become like your parents?" He asked, and I stayed silent. Ryker pulled me into his side and wrapped his arms around me "Rain, my dad got my mom pregnant at 14. I don't think you could screw up worse than that."

"My dad didn't even love us, he wished we were never born." I mumbled "I just don't want that to happen, and most young marriages usually end in some kind of conflict."

"Rain, I would never lay a hand on a kid or you. I am not you're dad, I'm not my dad, your not your mom, you're not my mom. We're our own person, who can make our own descions." Ryker tucked a piece or hair behind my ear.

I took a deep breath, and laid my head on his shoulder, not wanting to fight. He wrapped an arm around my shoulder and kissed the top of my head and I stared ahead at the altar.

"Callum being questioned in court?" I asked, lacing my fingers with his free hand. "Yeah, You're house is currently under restriction, cops want evidence for the crime scene." Ryker explained.

"Well what about you?" I asked, playing with his fingers "You told them you fought back for self defense right?"

He sighed, cleaning his jaw and stared down at our hands "Yeah I did but with my prison record, they're not going to believe me. I'll be put in court and maybe they'll keep in the prison for awhile. Depends if your brothers or Dad want to testify for me."

"They will." I said certain, it would be insane if they didn't want to defend him. Ryker is the reason they're alive, for God Sakes. He shifted in his spot "I don't know about that, You're dad and brothers want to see nothing more then me in a jail cell."

"Ryk, you're the reason they're alive." I turned to face him, letting go of his hand and pulling out of his grip "You're the reason I'm alive for crying out loud, they're going to defend you."

Ryker didn't say anything, just started at me with his jaw clenched and muscles tense "Let's just take it one step at a time, princess."

The doors of the church opened and I looked back to see Ryan. His lips tugged up to a slight smile "He's okay." I stood up from the pew, and ran over to hug Ryan.

He wrapped his arms around me tightly, and relief came over me that my dad is okay. Ryker came up, and I pulled away from Ryan. "Thank you." Ryan nodded slightly at him "You saved a life Anderson."

Ryker nodded in response while Ryan walked out of the church. My lips were in a grin by now, and I pressed my lips to Ryker's, and threw my arms around his neck.

~ ~ ~ ~ ~

My dad didn't get hit by the bullet that Ryker shot, but instead when he fell onto the shattered glass it impaled into his skin and bone.

He lost a lot of blood, but Joel donated some of his since they're both the same type of blood. Doctors and Nurses want him to be in a wheelchair for a couple weeks, to stop accessive walking. He is staying overnight in the hospital, but he's going to be okay.

"Rain, sweetie." My dad squeezed my hand "You need to go home, get some sleep." "Dad it's fine-" I started, but he shook his head.

I was currently in the hospital room with my dad. My brothers, and Ally were here too. "Rain Eliza, you have graduation tomorrow. Go home and get some rest. Plus I'm sure Alessandra would love for you two to have a sleepover."

Ally smiled at my dad "That's right Sheriff Thompson." My dad looked back at me, narrowing his eyes "Now go. I'll see you tomorrow at graduation."

Sighing, I gave in "Alright." Getting up from my seat, I gave my dad a hug and he kissed my forehead. Ally and I left the hospital after bidding my goodbyes to my brothers.

Ally slung her arm over my shoulder as we headed out of the hospital and heading to her jeep. "Where are we sleeping?" I raised an eyebrow at her "My house is under restrictions."

"Your boyfriend's house." She smirked, putting the jeep in drive and speeding down the road. My phone buzzed and I saw it was a text from Craig.

Craig Brown: Good luck tomorrow, I'm glad your dad is okay. See you at graduation Rain

Twiddling my thumbs, I responsed back before seeing if Ryker had texted me at all but there was nothing.

He had left a couple hours ago, because he had Melanie, Faith, and Reece all at his apartment tonight. The rest of the gang left about an hour ago to go home and get some sleep since it was 3 in the morning.

"Lighten up girly." Ally looked over at me with a small smile "You're going to be an offical adult tomorrow."

"Now that's a terrifying thought." I narrowed my eyes at her and a laugh escaped her lips with mumbling "Tell me about it."

"You and Ryker figure out the whole marriage thing?" She sat up straight and glanced back and fourth between me and the road. I tensed up and looked straight ahead at the pitch black road that Ally's headlights lit up.

"Yeah." I nodded, staring at the road "He apologized for trying to push it onto to me and will talk about when I'm ready."

"Well when are you going to be ready?" She asked curiously and my lips pursed before pressing in a tight line together. Moving my eyes from the road over to her, I took a deep breath before speaking.

"Now."

# Chapter 30

<^> Rain Thompson POV <^>

"Rain, baby." A soft voice said as I felt someone trace circles on the skin of my cheek and my eyes flickered open to adjust to the light coming in from the window to see Ryker laying on his side staring down at me.

A smile appeared on his face when my eyes opened "I have to run down to work real quick, Vince needs help on some transmission."

Rubbing my eyes, I sat up and nodded. He leaned over and pressed his lips to mine, and cupped my face with his hand giving me a soft gentle kiss before pulling away.

He got out of bed and pulled clothes on and I covered my naked body with the blanket.

"Wait, what about my graduation?" I asked him, realizing my graduation was today at one o'clock and it had already been eight in the morning. "I'll be back in time princess." He reassured "Its just a quick fix."

I nodded and he gave me one last peck before grabbing his keys and phone before walking out of his bedroom of the apartment which soon I saw Ally, Liz, and Faith walk in.

"OH RYKER! OH!" Ally fake moaned, while hitting the wall to make a banging sound "Oh daddy fuck me!"

I chucked a pillow at her and rolled my eyes "I am not loud and I do not call him daddy." They all sat down on the bed and Liz gave me a look and I raised an eyebrow at her.

"You're just naked so.." She trailed off "Who is top and bottom?"

"OK! Ew!" Faith shouted as I grabbed one of Rykers white t-shirts off the floor and pulled it on over my body and she put her hands over her ears "That's my big brother and Rain please don't answer that."

Ally rolled her eyes at Faith "Oh You are so 15." Then turning to me "So Rain what are you wearing for grad-"

Before she could finish I froze for a second before getting up from the bed and running to the bathroom and kneeling down in front of the toilet and throwing up.

All the girls came in, and Liz pulled my hair back as I continued to throw up and my stomach turned.

"Hello?" A voice yelled and I could tell it was Leah's. "In here!" Faith shouted back and I turned around to see Leah and Peter walk in.

"Whats going on?" Leah asked concerned, and I quickly flushed the toilet and closed the lid before sitting on top of it and wiping my mouth with the back of my hand.

"I don't know.." I trailed off "I'm sure its graduation jitters."

They all looked at each other and Peter directly looked at me and sighed "Rain are you pregnant?"

My head shot up immediately "What? No. Of course not, I'm eighteen I can't be pregnant."

Leah looked at me and I could see her face fall "Rain when was the last time you had your period?"

I Shrugged, fidgetting with my hands "A month ago? I've been late but I figured it was cause I started the pill. I can't be pregnant the last time Ryker and I had sex was in Italy."

Besides last night but if I was pregnant from last night I wouldn't be getting symptoms already.

"Rain." Ally buried her face in her hands "Oh my god. You're a month late..and a month ago was when you and Ryker did it in Italy."

Then the realization hit me, all the symptoms I've been having. The missed period, throwing up constantly, being so tired all the time and moody, my boobs being sore, etc but I just thought it was all the stress from being kidnapped, my dad being hurt, and graduation.

Faith walked out and ran back with a box of pregnancy test that was preopened. Leah's eyes widened "Why do you have those?!"

"I've had my scares" Faith bit her lip before handing me two pregnancy test "They say always take more than one so you know for sure."

I could not believe this and I was freaking out. I could not be pregnant, I just couldn't. I'm eighteen and my life is just starting.

Plus what would Ryker say? Or how would he react?

I looked down at the two test in my hand and then back up at Leah, Faith, Ally, Liz, and Peter. They all nodded and I took a deep breath before they all walked out and I looked down at the test again.

* * * * *

"You ready?" Joel asked as we pulled to a full stop before putting the car in park. I was staring down at my phone twiddling my thumbs above the screen as I stared at Rykers contact, and my heart was racing.

"Hey" Joel grabbed one of my hands, squeezing it and I looked over at him "Are you okay? You seem pretty out of it."

I wanted to break down into tears and tell him everything and that I was pregnant and was so scared. But I figured I should wait to Tell Ryker first before my brother so I just nodded "Y-Yeah..Just nervous."

He gave me a smile "You'll be okay sis. Just gotta go up there and get your diploma and not fall."

Shoving myself out of Joel's Black Lexus, I smoothed out my red dress that hugged my body and had a deep cut as well as quickly pulled off my converses to switch with a pair of red pumps.

Joel came around and handed me my white cap and gown. My schools colors were red and white so god forbid some poor girl gets their period in the middle of the ceremony.

"There's my princess" I heard Rykers voice say from a distance and he was dressed up nicely in a tux, with his hair done and everything. My face fell when I saw him approach me because my heart started racing me and anxiety hit me.

He hugged me and laid a quick kiss on my lips before pulling away a bit but keep his hands wrapped around my waist as he looked down at me.

"Damn Rain." Vince said looking me up and down "Maybe you should start showing more skin more often."

"Watch it." Ryker gritted, giving him a glare. I couldn't help but continue to zone out, after I took the pregnancy test I broke down for about 2 hours straight. I was so scared of everything, how Ryker would react, how we'd raise the baby, how I would continue with modeling, how I'd be part of the gang, how everyone would react.

Of course Leah, Peter, Faith, Ally, and Liz new because they were there when the test came back positive. I just had no idea what to do and was so lost.

Ally suggested abortion, and I am pro choice but I personally never would be able to do that..especially with Ryker. I mean I did want kids with him some day but I'm only 18..

"I actually need to talk to you-" I started but Ryker cut me off "Actually I need to talk to you too about something."

My eyebrows furrowed together as to what it could possibly be. He took my hand in his, intertwined his fingers with mine and then my brothers Ryan and Jax walked up and all gave each other a look.

Ryker started to lead me away from everyone and walked me down one of the hills of the school towards where the garden was and he stopped me mid way and turned me to face him.

"You're going to kill me-" He started and I lifted an eyebrow at him "But I know you havent seen your mom and I contacted her-"

"Ryker you did not." My eyes widened, and then he turned me around and pointed towards a tree where I saw a woman, man, and 3 teenage girls.

My heart started racing and my eyes went wide. I dropped my graduation cap in my hand and looked back at Ryker, and he smiled and nodded his head towards them "Go."

I ran down the hill and I saw her start walking towards me and soon we met halfway and I immediately tackled her into a hug.

"Mom." I breathed. She chuckled and her hug became tighter "Hi sweetheart."

Pulling away, I had tears of joy in my eyes. I hadn't seen my mom and years since my dad had won full custody of us and would not give us the rights to see her till we were all the legal age of eighteen.

She still looked exactly as I had remembered her. Long brown wavy hair with touches of dirty blonde strains, brown chocolate eyes with flakes of green in them, and the biggest pearly white smile.

I could see tears in her eyes too, and she put her hand on my face and cupped my cheek.

"God look at you.." She smiled, a single tear streaming down her cheek "You're so beautiful."

"Well I got my genes from the best." I breathed a laugh, wiping away the tears hoping my mascara wouldn't start running "I can't believe you're here."

"I know me either." She took my hand in hers and squeezed it "But Ryker contacted me and set up the flights and everything."

I looked back up at the top of the hill where Ryker was standing next to Ally, Liz, Leah, Craig, Neil, Vince, Peter, Reese, and Will and I mouthed 'Thank you, I love you' to him which he mouthed 'I love you too' back.

Looking back at my mom she turned and the man came up next to beside her, placing his hands on her shoulders.

"Rain, this is my boyfriend Leonardo." My mom introduced and he stuck his hand out to me which I shook "Please, just call me Leo."

My mom then pointed to the girls. "Rain these are Leo's daughters Hadley, Harley, and Hailey. Girls this is my daughter Rain."

Hadley seemed to be about 17 and had pale skin, dyed platinum blonde short hair to her shoulders, blue eyes, and small figure. She was chewing a piece of gum and definitely did not want to be here as she had her arms crossed and eyes rolled to the side.

Harley seemed to be about 15. Same pale skin with a tint of red that was hidden under her freckles and bright blue eyes, but her hair was naturally short blonde.

Hailey was about 13, and you could tell she was the most more laid back one out of all of them. Her eyes were brown, blonde long hair, no freckles but the same white pale skin.

"Nice to meet you." I swallowed a lump in my throat. It was just a lot to take in, I had never really thought about my mom having another family besides our family.

"No not really." Hadley snapped at me, and Leo scowled at her and told her to apologize which she had given me the most unapologetic apology.

"Hey Thompson!" A voice yelled and it had been Blake, and he jogged towards me with his graduation gown and cap on "Ceremony is about to begin, you ready?"

* * * *

After the graduation ceremony, I took a bunch of pictures with everyone. But I couldn't stop thinking about being pregnant, it was eating me up inside ecsepcailly everytime I looked at Ryker.

I had no idea what to do. I couldn't stop thinking about it no matter how hard I tried to.

"Baby" A voice said and then soon a hand was placed on my hip from behind me, making me jump and turn around to see Ryker.

He gave me a confused look before his face went straight as he examined mine "What aren't you telling me?"

Taken back at his question I stuttered "W-What? What do you mean? Nothing."

"Rain I know you and I know there's something you're not telling me." His tone became stern and his eyes narrowed at me.

We were currently in my bedroom, and I had came up here to escape from the 200 people here at my house. My brothers insisted on throwing me a graduation party even after I begged them not to throw one. They had invited some family and family friends, then people from my school and some of their friends as well as a lot of my dads colleagues.

"No there is seriously nothing." I lied "I'm just a bit overwhelmed from all the people being here and just taking in that I am really done with high school."

"And I am proud of you." Ryker smirked, pulling me closer to him and wrapping his arms around me "Ecsepcailly after all the shit you've gone through, and don't worry this is just the beginning."

"No." I sighed "I have no idea what I'm going to do now." Ryker furrowed his eyebrows at me "We already discussed everything? You're just doing modeling to stay on your feet, and you're going to move in with me."

I bit my lip and shifted my eyes to the side as I thought about how I couldn't model as much while pregnant because I modeled for teenage companies and brands.

"Yeah I guess."

Ryker then picked me up and laid me down on my bed before getting over top of me and leaving a trail of kisses down my neck then going further and further down. Before he soon met his lips to mine, and snuck his hand under the bottom of my dress and inserted his fingers, but I immediately pulled away.

"Ryker no." I sat up straight. "Rain you're so tense, just let me make you feel better." He pulled me towards him.

"No." I stood up from the bed, straightening my dress "I don't want to right now."

"Thats not what you were saying last night when I had you screaming." He muttered under his breath, rolling his eyes.

I opened my mouth to say something but quickly shut it when my stomach turned into knots. I immediately ran to the bathroom, kneeling down at the toilet and throwing up, which soon Ryker came in.

"Rain, baby?" His voice became filled with concern as he came over, pulling my hair back while rubbing circles on my back as I threw up again "What's wrong? Are you okay?"

I thought morning sickness only happened in the morning..

Tears pricked my eyes, as I flushed the toliet and put the seat down and sat on it as Ryker knelt down in front of me, taking my hands in his.

"This can't be happening." I mumbled to myself as I broke down into tears.

"Rain tell me what is going on." Ryker demanded, his voice getting stern and his eyes boring into me.

"I-I'm pregnant."

I cried, my eyes meeting Rykers and his face fell. He let go of my hands, standing up straight and buring his face in his hands.

I then saw the bathroom door open where it had been Ally and Leah "Oh there you are-"

They both stopped in their tracks when they saw my face covered in tears and Ryker obviously in disbelief.

"Rain tell me you're fucking with me. Is this some fucking sick joke?" He gritted through his teeth. "No.." I started "I took some test this morning, they came out positive."

Ryker stood up and chucked whatever was in his hands across the room and it felt like my heart had shattered seeing him so unhappy and angry.

"You're fucking 18 Rain! Do you really think we can take of a baby right now?!" He shouted, his tone filled with anger and frustration.

At this point I broke into tears, and felt like such a failure. "It takes two.." I mumbled under my breath staring down at the cold tile floor.

"Un-fucking-believable" He muttered, before turning around and walking out while slamming my door shut, making us all jump at how loud it was.

"Rain-" Ally came up and I immediately started sobbing. Ally came and sat down next to me as she pulled me into a hug, knowing exactly what I was crying about.

The door had opened again and Leah, Liz, and the rest of the gang had came in all showing concered faces. "Whats going on?" Craig asked sternly.

I broke out in a cry and a scream. What was I expecting? I knew Ryker would react out of anger and now I knew he was just going to leave me and not want to deal with a baby at 20. He had every right to not want that, we were too young.

Ally looked at me and nodded her head towards the gang, as to which I realized I did now have to tell them and not come up with some lame excuse like I just finished the notebook and thats why I was crying.

"I-I..I'm pregnant." I managed to get out, hyperventilating. The guys faces had dropped. "Rain you're kidding. How? When?" Vince started but quickly cut off by ally with a glare.

Sitting up straight, I wiped the tears in my eyes and tried to calm myself. "Italy." I stated, but didn't know how because we used a condom and it seemed fine.

"Are you gonna keep it?" Reese asked. "Its not an it." Leah smacked her bothers arm "Its a baby. My guess is a girl."

"Yeah..I mean I don't know. Ryker just found out and stormed out and doesn't see how we could do it." I stated and Neil spoke up "Oh Rain, you know he just needs to cool off. Hes just in shock."

Craig walked over and sat on my bed beside me. "I think this is a big decision. I know Ryker, and Neil is right he just needs to cool off and then he'll be alright. This is big news, and its completely up to you as to what you want to do with it. And I know we all will support you in what you decide."

Everyone nodded their head in agreement and I was shocked out how supportive Craig was being, expecting him to be as freaked as Ryker had been.

Faith had soon run upstairs with Melanie. "Quick, come downstairs. Ryker wants you" They both beamed before I wiped my final tears, stood up and straightened my dress.

The girls gave me a reassuring smile, before I led the way out of my room while everybody else had followed behind me where I had walked downstairs where everyone had been surronded in our living room.

My parents had both given me a smile, and my brothers faces were dull and everyone had been quiet and all eyes laid on me. Ryker had still been in his tux, and he had looked nervous but then his eyes met mine and face fell probably being able to tell that I had been crying. I'm sure everyone had.

"Rain Eliza Thompson" Ryker began, and I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion as to what was going on. "I've loved you since the day I laid my eyes on you and that had been the best day of my existence. Since I had met you, I didn't believe their was a purpose in life. I thought we are all just here till one day we were dead. But then I met you."

"Ryk-" I began, as he walked towards me and took my hands in his. "You are my purpose, and you will always be my princess. I don't want to live a day without you away from me. I felt like I've know you my whole life. You're my best friend. And you're my everything. Now yes we might've hated each other when we first met-" He chucked at the last part, making a small one leave my lips too at the thought of it.

"And I have gotten you into a lot of shit." He shook his head, then placing his hands on my stomach that had still been flat "But I promise to always protect you with everything I have. And I promise to never leave you or our baby's side."

Everyone's eyes grew wide and there was a gasp among the crowd of people, and a whisper of "Whats?!" I avoided looking at my brother or dad, not wanting the tension.

"Now I know I'm not rich, I know I'm not prince charming but I damn well will treat you like a princess everyday of your life, never letting you forget how beautiful you are, and will be the best dad that I can be. With you. I know we're young, but whats the wait." Ryker smiled, and I had placed my hand on his cheek and stared at his bright blue eyes that made me fall in love all over again. Taking his hands off my stomach, he reached into his pocket before pulling out a ring box and opening it then getting down on one knee in front of me. My eyes started watering, and I placed a hand over my mouth as I stared down at him.

"Will you marry me?"

I immediately nodded before saying "Yes." He slid the ring onto my finger, then standing up and hugging me tightly as I threw my arms around him and everybody started to clap and whistle.

He pressed his lips to mine leaving a soft gentle kiss on my lips, before pulling away and placing his forehead to mine.

"I love you. Forever." He breathed.

"I love you too. Always." I raised my head to meet his eyes, before smirking and opening my mouth to speak.

"And to think this all started with The Bad Boy's Gang.

# Epilogue

<^> Rain Anderson POV <^>

"I'm getting married today." I exhaled out as I stared back the reflection in the mirror looking right back at me. It was a day I dreamed about as a kid, and I couldn't fathom that this was the current reality. Turning to my side I looked over at my four month pregnant stomach, you could barely even see I was but my mom kept assuring I'd show soon but some people don't carry outer.

"The bride! The bride!" Liz came running in shouting at the top of her lungs, making me whirl around. Her smile beamed at me and I was glad that Liz could be the amount of excited for the both of us because I was pure nervousness.

I gave her a slight smile, making her furrow her eyebrows at me in confusion "What's wrong?" I shook my head in response "Nothing. Just super nervous."

"Oh well of course you're nervous, everybody is on their wedding day." She reassured, rolling her eyes slightly at me "And I would be too if I were you..for Christ sake's Rain have you not even showered yet? It's 7 hours till the wedding!"

I looked at her dumbfounded "7 hours Liz..I think I have time." She went towards the closet and started pulling out my dress, heels, and accessories. "Liz?" I spoke up "You don't think this is too much of-I don't know like a shot gun wedding? Ryker isn't only marrying me because he knew I was pregnant and what if-"

My babbling showed my nervousness and anxiety running through my body. I knew I wanted to marry Ryker, there was no doubt in my mind it was just the fear he was only marrying me because he felt like he had too after finding out I was pregnant. Not to mention the terrible statistics that my brothers put into my head about marriage and how most of them end in divorce, especially young ones.

"Rain!" Liz shouted as I rambled on and stopped what she had been doing and walked up and took my hands in her as she looked directly at me "Now I don't want to be a bitch but Ryker would leave any girl that he got pregnant and not feel obligated, so with that said Ryker wants to marry you for you. He loves you Rain and what you two have is special. And don't listen to your brother's they are just worried about you and don't want you to get married young but that's not their decision. You got this, and this is normal to think this way. Ryker is probably just as nervous. Now deep breaths."

I took a deep breath in and nodded in agreement that Liz was right about everything and all it was, was wedding day jitters. The door swung open, where Reece and Vince walked in.

"There's my sister-in-law." Reece came right up and hugged me tightly, making me chuckle. He grabbed me by my shoulders and looked down at me "Now it's not too late to back out, my brother is after all a bipolar psychopath."

"Look who's talking." Vince elbowed him "You have the same gene pool you know dipshit." Reece shot Vince back a look of shock, making Liz and I laugh in response.

"Now there's that beautiful bride." Vince gave me a smile "How you holding up?"

"The beautiful bride that still needs to shower!" Liz interrupted "We have schedule to keep and all Rain has done is brush her teeth!"

I waved her off, turning my attention back towards Vince "Just super nervous." Vince leaned into my ear before whispering "I promised I wouldn't tell and dipshit Reece over there will snitch cause he thinks he tough shit being best man but Ryker is practically shitting himself right now and going total groom-zilla."

"Oh that is total bullshit." I replied, the thought of Ryker of all people being a groom-zilla. Vince put his hands up in surrender "I wish I was fucking kidding. Craig is just about ready to murder him since he's the one calling the shots right now."

"You fucking told!" Reece yelled, catching onto what Vince was and I were talking about. "Oh shut up! You're only so defensive cause your the best man. When you know it's only cause your his brother!" Vince snapped back at him.

"OH! No you did NOT!" Reece gasped "Take it back!"

"Never." Vince gave him a smug look. Shaking my head in disgrace, I looked over at Liz knowing she'd take care of them. In which she yelled over there back and forth remarks "Ok you two! Out!" Liz pushed Vince and Reece out of the bedroom and slammed the door shut but I could hear them continue to argue from outside the door.

"Well Vince may not be your future brother-in-law but Reece will be..so good luck." Liz chirped, and the door swung open once again. Ally walked into the room, with a confused look on her face "What are those two arguing about-you know what? I don't want to know."

She looked at me and handed me an envelope "And this is for you." My heart fluttered at the envelope in my hands as I knew it was from Ryker. I may have forced him just a little into the idea of writing each other letters to open on the day of our wedding day since Liz is going to keep us separated all day. I hadn't been the superstitious type and afraid it would be bad luck to see him on our wedding day before the first look, but the late night arguments with Liz on this was just not worth the fight.

Dear Rain,

Now I may have dropped out of high school, so I haven't wrote one of these shits since like Freshman year English class so read at your own risk. The day I met you in your high school,

when you practically saved my life was a day I knew would change my life forever. Now for some reason you were not captivated my obvious beauty and charming personality, but I knew you would not just be some girl who was dumb enough to get involved with a drug deal. Those blue eyes followed me wherever I went, no matter how hard I tried to hate you. It was impossible, and I cannot believe that today is the day I get to call you my wife and mine forever. Our journey has had its rough patches, but has been nothing but boring.

This is still only the beginning of our journey, and no matter where you go I will be right behind you. I promise to love you with all my heart and to always protect you and our children. We haven't been together long, but I have never been so sure about anything in my life and that is that you are my soulmate and most importantly my best friend. You have the purest heart, the most dazzling beauty, bravest girl I know, and are so strong. I cannot wait to live the rest of my life with you, till were old and frail.

I have the most precious gift getting to wake up next to you every single morning knowing that you're all mine. So to my beautiful bride, I cannot wait to see you meet me at the aisle. Here is to forever and always. I love you princess.

~ Your Husband, Ryker.

Tears pricked at my eyes, as I read through the letter. All the feeling of anxiety and nervousness flushed through my body and I felt a feeling of comfort settle in. The letter was nothing less than I expected with Ryker as you could see his sarcasm through the words but I knew that he meant what he had wrote.

"You ready to start getting ready?" Ally asked, making me head whip up to hers and I nodded as I wiped the happy tears away from my eyes.

* * * * *

"Rain!" Melanie shouted as she rain up towards me and I quickly bent down to pick her up and hugged her tightly.

"Oh my gosh, look how beautiful you look." I tucked a piece of her hair behind her ear. Her eyes were beaming and she was grinning ear to ear "No you look so pretty."

"

Oops! This image does not follow our content guidelines. To continue publishing, please remove it or upload a different image.

"Thank you Mel." I placed my forehead to hers "Are you nervous?"

"I don't think she should be the one to be nervous." Leah walked over to me as I set Mel down. "No I'm good- not nervous or anything, ok maybe a little. But just excited."

Leah was due in two weeks, and in the words of Will 'About to pop like an oompa loompa.' Her and Craig were working it out slowly, but surely. They were having a boy, which shocked everyone cause everyone believed it was a girl. Craig has actually been supportive the past trimester after Ryker flipped out on him one night after telling him he needed to grow up. They are in this weird talking/dating stage but won't put a label on it but are planning on moving in together once the baby was born so it was overall easier for Leah.

As for Liz and Peter, well they did make it official a week after my graduation and are the cutest together although Mrs. Doyle's constant interrogation against Peter is never ending. As for me I did just college but have decided to get a bachelors degree online due to not wanting to have to leave mid-semester when I have the baby.

"Rain. Someone's here to see you." Alex; my childhood best friend pushed back the curtain to the dressing room. All the wedding party had gathered at a hotel last night so we could all get ready together and even got make up artist and hairstylist.

Alex walked through with my mom following right behind her. Her brown hair was curled loosely and she wore a loosely fitted champagne dressed that complimented her thing figure well. When she walked in, she froze in her spot as she looked at me before starting to tear up and put a hand over her mouth.

"Oh my god look at you." She cried "You're stunning." She hugged me tightly and kissed my cheek, before taking my hands in hers and squeezing them tightly. "You're all grown up..my baby girl is getting married.."

"Mom don't cry." I said in attempt to not make me cry as well. I smoothed out my wedding dress that I couldn't believe I was actually wearing. It was a white mermaid style dress with a deep V that gave it a little bit of a sex appeal to it, with an open lace back and long lace trail. My dream dress to say the least.

The bridesmaids wore matching maroon color dresses that were long and silk with a slit in the side of them with matching heels

Oops! This image does not follow our content guidelines. To continue publishing, please remove it or upload a different image.

The bridesmaids wore matching maroon color dresses that were long and silk with a slit in the side of them with matching heels. Groomsmen wore gray tuxedos with maroon ties, with dress shoes. Ryker was going to be wearing a dark maroon colored tux with black dress paints and a black tie even though I fought for a bow tie.

Oops! This image does not follow our content guidelines. To continue publishing, please remove it or upload a different image.

Oops! This image does not follow our content guidelines. To continue publishing, please remove it or upload a different image.

When the curtain opened again my dad and three brothers entered

Oops! This image does not follow our content guidelines. To continue publishing, please remove it or upload a different image.

When the curtain opened again my dad and three brothers entered. Jax, Ryan and Joel were not happy at all that I had been getting married at 18 and were convinced I was only doing it because of getting pregnant. Joel was the most understanding out of all of them, Joel saw that Ryker loved me and would take care me even though he didn't like him and respected my happiness.

My dad on the other hand, well it had been a fight. With the news coming that I was pregnant with it, it didn't go over well. My dad nearly killed Ryker but Joel was the one who had explained that he could not force me what to do and if this is what I wanted to be happy, then that should be my priority and that if I was having the baby that it was a good thing for Ryker to be by my side instead of running away.

My relationship with my parents is strange to say the least, I don't hate them for what either of them did. I don't hate my mom for leaving and I don't hate my dad for what he has done, I love them both. I'm working on my relationship with both of them and my dad has been going to counseling every week now for months and is now the most excited person to become a grandfather.

My dad even helped Ryker and I buy our very first own house so we could get out of Ryker's apartment and it was still right in New York. The past couple months have changed a lot. Leah and Craig are having a baby in two weeks and moving into together. Peter and Liz got together. Alex and Joel just celebrated their six months. I began college online, and Ryker bought our first house.

This is just the next step.

"You look beautiful Rain Eliza." My dad came up to hug me as well and my brothers followed in his footsteps.

"I should've told you no when you went to that school night you met Ryker. And what are the three D's again?" Joel teased.

"Yes but I am 18 not 8, and no drinks, drugs, or dudes." I joked back at him and looked at my family in front of me. My parents might hate each other but they were able to put up with each other for a day so I could have the perfect wedding.

"Now for something old and borrowed.." My mom took a charm bracelet from her purse and clasped it onto my wrist "It's been in my family for the past 7 generations, every time a daughter gets married it gets passed down till their daughter gets married."

"Uh what if they don't have any girls?" Ryan spoke up and I gave him a glare "Don't think that was the point Ryan. But thank you mom, its beautiful."

"Ok, positions! positions!" Ally yelled loudly, pulling everybody in together "The wedding is starting in five minutes!"

We all made our way to the downstairs of the hotel where the lobby had been closed off for the wedding and it was being held outside in the back. This hotel was known for hosting weddings and its gorgeous venues and scenery.

I peaked outside to see Ryker and Vince who insisted on taking a ordaining class so he could be the one to marry us because quote 'I can be in all the pictures in the background doing the most epic photo bomb

Oops! This image does not follow our content guidelines. To continue publishing, please remove it or upload a different image.

I peaked outside to see Ryker and Vince who insisted on taking a ordaining class so he could be the one to marry us because quote 'I can be in all the pictures in the background doing the most epic photo bomb.' Ryker stood there talking to Vince and I was in awe at good he looked. Our weeding had 213 people and the reception was closer to 300, due to all my family as well as family friends. It was sure not a small wedding, and a big crowd to make me even more nervous. The Italy gang flew all the way back as well to attend and I could see them in the audience as well as Blake and Shea. My eyes scanned the crowd over and I returned back behind the wall separating me from everyone else.

"Ok Liz and Peter you follow behind Reece and I. After Liz and Peter is Leah and Craig, then Alex and Joel it's your turn. Neil and Faith you are the last couple to follow out and then Mel is the flower girl and she's also bringing the rings, does Melanie have the rings?" Ally rehearsed.

"Good luck." My mom hugged me on last time and headed towards the front seats to sit with Ryan and Jax. My dad came up aside me and I gave him a small smile, feeling the guilt hit me over again.

"Rain I understand." He hugged me "I've put you through hell. I don't deserve to walk you down the aisle and you've become such a strong independent women and have overcome so much, no one deserves to walk you down that aisle except yourself."

I decided to not let my dad walk me down the aisle because our relationship is not where it should be. One day it will hopefully get there but today I decided that I would be the one to walk myself down that aisle.

"I love you sweetheart." He kissed my forehead and squeezed my hands one last time. "Love you too dad." I smiled and he walked out into the seating area. Ally got everyone in order and I was so grateful for her to be my maid of honor. It was a tough decision between her and Liz but

since Ally has always been one of Ryker's best friends and one of my closest we decided on her and Liz said a million times that there would not be any hard feelings.

I heard the piano and cello start playing canon in the D and my heart was pounding a million miles in my chest and my palms were sweating profusely. Ally and Reece went out first then soon followed Liz and Peter, Leah and Craig, Alex and Joel, and Faith and Neil. I got Mel ready and handed her the basket of flowers.

Mel gave me on last big hug before she headed down the aisle and started throwing the flower pedals along it. People were all turned around waiting for me to walk out. I grabbed my bouquet and gripped it tightly as I waited for my cue from the wedding director. I started to walk out and felt all eyes on me as everyone stood up.

My eyes immediately met Ryker's and his blue eyes bored back into mine. A grin tugged at his lips and I smiled back. Slowly walking down the aisle the feeling was overwhelming and a million different emotions.

I couldn't believe this was actually happening.

Soon enough I reached the end of aisle and stood in front of Ryker, in which he grabbed my hands and whispered into my ear "You look gorgeous princess."

My cheeks blushed red and Vince opened his book with the printed off lines in them and began his speech.

"Celebrating the uniting of two people in this way proclaims in public what was decided in the private corners of the heart. It proclaims the couple's belief that they are meant to be together, and that they are ready to embrace the future together. Rain and Ryker wish to pledge their vows to each other before us" Vince began "Now Ryker repeat after me."

"I, Ryker, take you, Rain" Vince looked towards Ryker.

"I, Ryker, take you, Rain" Ryker repeated, squeezing my hands three times to say I love you.

"to be my lawfully wedded wife." Vince continued to read off the vows.

"to be my lawfully wedded wife." Ryker breathed, and I could tell her was about to start tearing up himself.

"To have and to hold,"

"To have and to hold," Ryker's iconic smirk that we all know and loved appeared on his lips when he saw me then to start to tear up myself.

"from this day forward,"

"from this day forward," Ryker repeated.

"until death do us part."

"until death do us part." Ryker finished his vows off to me and I was in tears by now. Everyone's eyes were boring into us, and I was too emotional to even speak as the pregnancy hormones were not helping by any means.

I was crying hard now and trying to wipe the tears away without my makeup getting ruined because Liz may kill me. Ryker wiped the tears away on my face with his thumb and turned to the audience and said "Don't worry it's the pregnancy hormones."

Everyone abrupted into laughter in response and I regained myself and Ryker asked if I was ok in which I nodded back. Vince turned towards me now, placing my hands back into Ryker's and beginning my vows.

"I, Rain, take you, Ryker, to be my lawfully wedded husband, To have and to hold, from this day forward, until death do us part." I repeated all my vows back to Ryker making all of this fairy tale becoming my reality that the man in front of me was officially mine forever and there was nothing that would come in between us.

" "Do you, Ryker, take Rain to be your lawfully wedded wife?" Vince asked.

"I do." Ryker smiled,

"Do you, Rain, take Ryker to be your lawfully wedded husband?"

"I do." I grinned back at Ryker.

"Now with the power invested in me by become-ordained.com, I now pronounce you as Husband and Wife!" Vince shouted clearly for everybody to hear "You may now kiss the bride."

Ryker pulled me in and smashed his lips into mine and dipped me back, and I wrapped my arms around his neck. Everybody shot up from their seats and clapped and cheered. His lips moved softly against mine and we pulled away after a few seconds and Ryker stood me back up right and then kissed my stomach which made my heart flutter.

Vince congratulated us before whispering something into Ryker's ear. Ryker swiftly picked me up and carried me down the aisle bridal style. People blew bubbles as we walked down and as we enter the outside everybody followed and gathered around and Ryker placed me down into the passenger seat of the skyline that was waiting for us and he ran around to the other side.

Ryker gave me a peck on the kiss before speeding off away from everybody and I heard the engine roar as he accelerated towards the road. He held my hand in the center of the console and looked over at me "I love you Mrs. Anderson."

"I love you too Mr. Anderson." I leaned over the seats for another kiss.

* * * * * *

Later at the reception Ryker and I entered through and everyone clapped and Melanie ran from Faith and up to us. Ryker picked her up and twirled her around and she looked at me then Ryker "Does this mean I got another sister and now and a niece to play with it?"

"Niece?" Ryker questioned, cocking an eyebrow at her before looking at me and I was giving Melanie a look and shaking my head to be quiet. Ryker slowly put Melanie down and we were in the middle of the reception floor as everyone was watching us as we had just entered.

"Uh-oh.." Mel said before running back over to Faith and I internally cursed Faith for telling Melanie about the baby. "Um Rain, want to explain?" Ryker asked, blinking at me.

"Ok I wanted to surprise you." I sighed "I found out yesterday, It's a GIRL!"

"You're serious?!" Ryker was taken back "It's a girl?! ITS A FUCKING GIRL!" Ryker shouted loud enough, making everybody hear and picked me up and spun me around before setting me down and cupping my face in his hands "We're having a girl!?"

I nodded as I started to cry again as the excrement Ryker had was more than I had ever could've wished for and I could tell how excited he was to be a dad. Peter, Vince, Will, Reece, Neil, and even Craig came running up and jumped up and down and patted Ryker on the back and hugged me over and over again.

Ally, Liz, Faith, and Leah came up and hugged me as well and told me congratulations. Ryker wrapped his arms around me from behind and looked at Craig and pointed a finger at him "Now you better keep your horny little fuck son away from my daughter."

I elbowed Ryker "They're cousins! That's gross!" Craig flipped him off and Neil went over to the DJ stand and started to play music. We all took our seats as dinner was about to be served, but my parents came up to us as everyone was seated.

Ryker tensed up as him and my father still didn't get a long greatly but I hoped one day that they would, but considering my dad has arrested him how many times I didn't see it coming anytime soon. "A girl! That's amazing, you two are going to be such great parents." My mom hugged me then Ryker.

"Yes, congratulations." My dad tensed up because of Ryker's presence, but turned to face him "Take care of your girls, and especially mine. Be the father I wasn't Anderson, I know you will."

I was shocked as to what my dad had said and hoped this was the beginning to a new start. Ryker nodded sternly "I will sir, I promise."

"Wait before you guys sit!" Ally came running up to Ryker and I "Follow me, I have a surprise." Ally pulled us out of the reception area. I asked her where we were going but failed to get an answer till she pulled us out towards the garden where I saw a familiar someone standing there.

"James?" I asked shocked, looking at Ryker to make sure he wasn't about to freak out and try to kill him as they have shared hatred for each other. He shrugged in response, knowing what I had been think. James walked over to me, pulling me into a hug.

"What are you doing here?" I asked in shocked, knowing I didn't invite him because Ryker would murder him if he saw him breathing the same air that I did. "Ryker invited me." James admitted, making me look at Ryker shocked.

"What?" You're my wife now, it's not like he can take you away." Ryker smirked towards him "But I did figure you'd like to see some of your friends again, I know you were close when you were in group therapy when you were younger."

"Thank you so much Ryk." I gave him a hug and a peck on a lips before he said he'd be inside waiting and I turned towards James. "What are you too cool for a suit?" I joked, looking down at his jeans and leather jacket.

"No." He chuckled, "I just wanted to stop by, don't have a babysitter for Phoenix and were actually headed up for Massachusetts, get away from all the gang drama. Anyways though you really look beautiful Rain- Anderson is a lucky guy for sure, really has a special girl."

"Two special girls." I corrected and his eyes widened "Oh my god are you pregnant?"

"Yeah a little over four months."

"Were you-" James started but I shook my head knowing he was going to ask if I was pregnant during the time I was held captive but it was from after.

"Well congratulations..on the wedding and the baby. I'm glad Rain, you deserve the happiness. And as much as I'd like to punch Anderson right in the face I hope he takes care of you and treats you well."

"He does, and thank you James. I mean for stopping by and everything." I gave him one last hug knowing he would have to be going. "Can I have my wife back now?" Ryker came out, pulling me into his side and wrapping an arm around me.

"Yeah I should get going. Congratulations Rain, you look beautiful." James complimented, making Ryker tightened his grip on me and I could feel the possessiveness kick in. James nodded towards Ryker "Congratulations Anderson."

"Bye James."

"Bye Rain." He said before turning around and walking towards his car where I saw Phoenix sitting in the back of the car in her car seat and she waved over to me from the rolled down window and I waved back her making her smile.

"Now." Ryker turned me to face him "What would you like to do tonight Mrs. Anderson?"

"Hmm.." I looked up at him, intertwining my fingers with him "What ideas do you have Mr. Anderson?"

"Oh I have a few." He smirked before picking me up bridal style. Our eyes met and I had a flashback to the first time our eyes met in the gym locker room when we were hiding out.

"You know, you are so lucky I saved your life." I smirked at him, and Ryker chuckled "Yes I am."

"I love you Rain."

"I love you too Ryker."